

---

This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google<sup>TM</sup> books

<https://books.google.com>



**B** 336270





UA  
652  
.K5  
T5





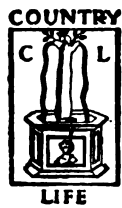
*In Memory of*  
**STEPHEN SPAULDING**  
*1907 - 1925*  
*CLASS of 1927*  
**UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN**

ARRANGED 1927

IN THE "COUNTRY LIFE" SERIES OF MILITARY HISTORIES

*General Editor* : LAWRENCE WEAVER, F.S.A.

## THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL REGIMENT)



*First published in 1916.*

*The Story of*  
**THE KING'S**  
**(LIVERPOOL REGIMENT)**  
*Formerly The Eighth Foot*

BY  
**T. R. THRELFALL**

WITH A PREFACE BY  
**THE EARL OF DERBY, K.G.**



**LONDON**  
PUBLISHED AT THE OFFICES OF "COUNTRY LIFE,"  
20 TAVISTOCK STREET, COVENT GARDEN, W.C., AND BY  
GEORGE NEWNES, LTD., 8-11 SOUTHAMPTON STREET,  
STRAND, W.C. NEW YORK: CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS



551217

44

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### PREFACE

BY THE EARL OF DERBY, K.G.

*I could have wished that somebody who had served in the Liverpool Regiment should have written this foreword as I feel I have but little right to do so. My connection, however, with the town from which the Regiment takes its second title must be my excuse.*

*The Regiment quite rightly speaks of itself and wishes to be spoken of as "The King's," but I venture to think that recent years have made all who belong to the Regiment feel that from their second title of "Liverpool Regiment," they have been brought into closer touch than heretofore with the people of Liverpool, to the mutual advantage both of the Regiment and the City.*

*Through England's long military history the name of "The King's" is constantly appearing serving with distinction in all parts of the globe, and obtaining for itself by its past deeds a reputation which it has nobly lived up to during the present war.*

*With the introduction of the Territorial Forces Act, six volunteer battalions became battalions of The King's (Liverpool Regiment), and I venture to say that their conduct in this war has made their Regular brethren proud of them, just as they in turn are proud of the Regular Battalions whose example in discipline and bravery they have not unsuccessfully striven to emulate.*

*Since the beginning of the war Service Battalions have been added to the long list of Battalions of The King's*

---

## *Preface*

---

*(Liverpool Regiment), and I feel certain that they, in their turn, will add further laurels to the record of the Regiment, as will also the Reserve Battalion—if I mistake not, the only Reserve Battalion—which, as such, has taken the Field.*

*Liverpool is proud of its Regiment, and the close connection that exists between the City and the Regiment will, I am confident, be continued for all time. When Peace is declared, and men return to their civilian duties, they will find that the people of Liverpool will welcome them back and will not be unmindful of the duty that rests on the City to provide for the occupation of those who return, and for the wants of the dependants of those who have fallen in battle.*

---

# *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

## CONTENTS

	PAGE
PREFACE, BY THE EARL OF DERBY, K.G. . . . .	v
INTRODUCTION . . . . .	xiii

### CHAPTER I

#### EARLY YEARS, 1685-1700

<i>The origin of The King's (Liverpool Regiment)—Famous Colonels—The Portsmouth Captains—Campaign in Ireland . . . . .</i>	i
--	---

### CHAPTER II

#### MARLBOROUGH'S EARLY CAMPAIGNS, 1701-JULY 1704

<i>How the Regiment saved the British Army at Nimeguen—The Battle of the Schellenberg . . . . .</i>	10
---	----

### CHAPTER III

#### BLENHEIM, AUGUST 1704

<i>Harrying the Bavarians—The Duke of Marlborough and his Contemporaries—The Battle of Blenheim . . . . .</i>	21
---	----

### CHAPTER IV

#### RAMILLIES AND OUDENARDE: 1705-1708

<i>How Marlborough forced the French Lines—The Battle of Ramillies—The Battle of Oudenarde . . . . .</i>	34
--	----

### CHAPTER V

#### THE CLOSE OF THE MARLBOROUGH CAMPAIGNS, 1708-1714

<i>Siege of Lille—Saving the Great Convoy—Capture of Tournay—Battle of Malplaquet—Eclipse of the Great Duke—Regiment renamed The King's . . . . .</i>	49
---	----



---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CONTENTS (*continued*)

#### CHAPTER VI

##### SEVEN BATTLES, 1714-1763

	PAGE
<i>Dunblane — Dettingen — Fontenoy — Falkirk — Culloden — Roucoux—Laufeld . . . . .</i>	60

#### CHAPTER VII

##### CANADA, 1768-1785; EGYPT, 1801

<i>Campaigning in the New World—Captain Foster's Exploits— Landing at Aboukir—Battle for Alexandria . . . . .</i>	72
---	----

#### CHAPTER VIII

##### AMERICAN CAMPAIGN, 1812-1814

<i>Capture of Martinique—The American War—Capture of Ogensburg—Defence of Fort George—A Surprise Attack —Defence of Sackett's Harbour—Amazing Exploits at Niagara—A short-lived 2nd Battalion . . . . .</i>	81
---	----

#### CHAPTER IX

##### THE INDIAN MUTINY, DELHI, 1857

<i>Half a century of Peace—Fort Pillour—First use of Khaki— Siege of Delhi—Private John Brown—Storming the Water Bastion—Fall of the City . . . . .</i>	91
---	----

#### CHAPTER X

##### THE INDIAN MUTINY, 1857-1858

<i>Battle of Agra—Relief of Lucknow—Fighting at Cawnpore— Subduing the Rebel Provinces . . . . .</i>	102
--	-----

#### CHAPTER XI

##### SOUTH AFRICA, 1899-1902

<i>Siege of Ladysmith—V.C. won by Private Heaton, Corporal Knight and Sergeant Heaton—Boer attacks on Helvetia— Guerilla Warfare—Peace . . . . .</i>	113
--	-----

---

# *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

## CONTENTS (*continued*)

### CHAPTER XII

THE WORK OF THE 2ND BATTALION, 1858-1915	PAGE
<i>Formation of the 2nd Battalion—India—Afghan Campaign— Battle of Peiwar Kotal—Campaign in Burma—Fighting in the Euphrates Valley . . . . .</i>	<i>124</i>

### CHAPTER XIII

FROM MONS TO THE MARNE : 1ST BATTALION	
<i>Magnitude of the War—Landing of the B.E.F.—The King's Liverpools at the Battle of Mons—The Retreat from Mons —The Battle of the Marne . . . . .</i>	<i>131</i>

### CHAPTER XIV

ON THE AISNE : 1ST BATTALION	
<i>The Retreat of the German Right Wing—The Battle of the Aisne —How the Germans lost the Initiative—Honours Won— The Modest Soldier . . . . .</i>	<i>137</i>

### CHAPTER XV

THE FIGHT FOR YPRES : 1ST BATTALION	
<i>Trench warfare—Barring the Road to Calais—The Battles of Neuve Chapelle, Festubert, Cuinchy and Hooze—The blowing up of Hill 60—Distinctions won . . . . .</i>	<i>144</i>

### CHAPTER XVI

THE WORK OF THE 2ND, 3RD AND 4TH BATTALIONS	
<i>A Tribal Raid on the North-west Frontier of India—The Persian Gulf Expedition—How the 3rd and 4th Battalions have acquitted themselves in Flanders . . . . .</i>	<i>153</i>

### CHAPTER XVII

THE WORK OF THE TERRITORIAL BATTALIONS	
<i>The Famous Fifth—The Sixth or Liverpool Rifles—The Seventh, the Eighth or Liverpool Irish—The Ninth or Liverpool Press Guards—The Tenth or Liverpool Scottish . . . . .</i>	<i>160</i>

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CONTENTS (*continued*)

#### CHAPTER XVIII

##### THE WORK OF THE SERVICE BATTALIONS

	PAGE
<i>Fifteen New Units—The Dock Battalion—A Victory for Peace</i> . . . . .	181

#### CHAPTER XIX

"LIGHTS OUT" . . . . .	184
------------------------	-----

#### APPENDICES

(A) THE OFFICERS' ROLL OF HONOUR . . . . .	187
(B) SUPPLEMENTARY LIST OF HONOURS . . . . .	192
(C) LIST OF OFFICERS SERVING IN THE BEGINNING OF THE SECOND YEAR OF THE GREAT WAR .	199
INDEX . . . . .	213

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

#### PLATES

	<i>Facing page</i>
Private the Eighth Foot, 1742 (in colour) . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
Lord Ferrers, the founder of the Regiment and First Colonel . . . . .	1
James, Duke of Berwick, Second Colonel . . . . .	6
The Portsmouth Captains . . . . .	8
Lieut.-General John Richmond Webb, Colonel 1695-1715 . . . . .	56
The Colours of the 1st Battalion . . . . .	88
The Regimental Memorial for Afghanistan, Burma and South Africa, 1878-1902 . . . . .	128
The King's Liverpools in the trenches near Ypres in May 1915 . . . . .	150
The Advance towards Bagdad . . . . .	154
Map of Flanders . . . . .	212

#### FIGURES IN TEXT

	PAGE
Map of Marlborough's March to Blenheim, 1704 . . . . .	16
Plan of the Battle of Blenheim, 1704 . . . . .	27
Plan of the Battle of Ramillies, 1706 . . . . .	41
Plan of the Battle of Oudenarde, 1708 . . . . .	45
Plan of the Battle of Malplaquet, 1709 . . . . .	55
Plan of the Battle of Dettingen, 1743 . . . . .	62
Plan of the Battle of Fontenoy, 1745 . . . . .	67
Plan of the Egyptian Campaign, 1801 . . . . .	78





## INTRODUCTION

THE title of this book, *The Story of The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*, indicates its scope and purpose. It is not intended to take the place of Cannon's *Historical Record of the King's (Liverpool Regiment)*, the third edition of which (prepared by Lieut.-Col. H. J. Evans, lately commanding the Second Battalion) brought the doings of the Regiment down to the close of 1903. If any reader wants a chronological summary or brief biographies of the officers who have served in the Regiment during the last century and a half, he must betake himself to that *Record*. I have been concerned to show The King's as a fighting regiment, and to let its unforgettable deeds shine out against the background of English history. Without pretending to be a military expert, I may at least claim long familiarity with the story of the Regiment's doings and a keen appreciation of the part it has played in preserving our liberties. I cannot do better in this connection than quote the words of the General Editor when he wrote of his own *Story of The Royal Scots*: "The series, of which this volume forms a part, is designed to satisfy the grateful interest which the country feels in the history of the great military units by whose efforts, under God and the British Navy, our shores have been kept inviolate, and the Empire built on foundations of honour and liberty." With this purpose in mind, I have sought to make as full as possible the story of the Regiment's doings in the field

---

## *Introduction*

---

during the Great War up to the end of 1915. The material available has been somewhat scant and disjointed, and the story could not have been told at all but for the help which has been generously given me on all sides. Proofs of chapters XIII to XVII have been forwarded to the officers commanding the various battalions mentioned; and the list of those to whom I owe thanks for their kindness and courtesy in checking facts and names is so long that I may be excused from mentioning them in detail. I must, however, express my especial indebtedness to Colonel Tripp, who is in command of the Regimental Dépôt at Seaforth Barracks. The list of the distinctions gained by the officers, non-commissioned officers, and men of the Regiment, is necessarily incomplete, but has been brought up to date, as far as possible at the time of printing, in Appendix B. To any one who may look in vain for such record of their service, I can only tender my apologies, and assure them that I have done my best in circumstances which make hard the way of the author.

T. R. THRELFALL.

---

## *Errata and Addenda*

---

### ERRATA AND ADDENDA

THE author's attention has been called to certain errors in his account of the service of the First Battalion as given on pages 133 to 142. These arose owing to a wholly untrue account of the battle of Mons from the pen of a private of the regiment, which appeared in the principal daily papers and went uncontradicted at the time. Unfortunately the author did not hear of the inaccuracies into which he was thus led until after this volume was published. He therefore hastens to make the following corrections, which have been approved by Brigadier-General C. J. Steavenson and Lt.-Col. Sheppard.

*Page 133.* The First Battalion was not Advanced Guard to the 6th Infantry Brigade at Mons, but in brigade reserve near Givry. The casualties during August 23-24 were light, nor was the Battalion engaged with German infantry during the battle.

On the morning of the third day of the battle, at Bavai, when the Battalion formed the Rear Guard, about 250 Germans passed in close formation across the front of two of the Liverpool companies, but did not attack, and scattered as soon as fire was opened.

*Pages 139-140.* The date of the beginning of the battle of the Aisne is given incorrectly. The First Battalion crossed the river on September 14, not in October, by a pontoon thrown at Pont d'Arcy, not by an aqueduct, and did so unmolested. It established itself at Moussey, not at Missey, which is about five miles down the river.

*Pages 141-142.* The story about the guns is untrue, and there was no incident in the battle which gives colour to it.



---

## *Errata and Addenda*

---

*Page 145.* The First Battalion attacked at Givenchy on March 10, 1915, and not at Neuve Chapelle.

*Page 146.* At the action at Hill 60, the Fourth Battalion took part in the attack, not the First, which was then at Richebourg.

*Page 164, line 33.* The Sixth Battalion was not in action at the battle of Festubert with the 6th Brigade, and the story recorded on page 165 should be added to the chapters dealing with the First Battalion. The British line, on May 15, 1915, was composed of four lines of breastworks, A, B, C and D; the Berkshire Regiment, which was the centre battalion of the attacking force, held A and B; the 1st King's, in support of the Berkshire Regiment, held C and D. By 10 p.m. on the night of the 15th the Battalion was in position, and at 11.30 p.m., the hour for the assault, as the Berkshire Regiment moved forward, the King's gradually closed up to the front line, and by about midnight was occupying A and B breastworks.

About 1 a.m. on the 16th a call for reinforcements was received, and the Brigadier ordered up two companies of the King's. C and D companies, under Captains McErvell and Wheen, moved forward to the captured German line and remained there all day with the Berkshire Regiment.

The two remaining companies then moved forward and occupied A breastwork, and here they remained the whole day. It was from this line that Lieut. Hutchinson took forward ammunition, and from where Lance-Corporal Tombs brought in the wounded, for which act of gallantry he was awarded the V.C.

At dark, on the 16th, the two companies in A breastwork moved forward to the captured German trench, and, with the two companies which had been there the whole day, relieved the Berkshire Regiment in the forward captured trench.

At 5 a.m. on the 17th two companies of King's attacked and captured about 700 yards of the German line, together with 200 prisoners. Lieut. Hutchinson led this attack.

---

## *Errata and Addenda*

---

### CORRECTIONS IN NAMES, Etc.

Page	98, line 11,	for	Brand	read	Brind.	
"	"	"	30,	"	Bagley	" Bayly.
"	99,	"	8,	"	"	" "
"	"	"	18,	"	"	" "
"	113,	"	5,	"	"	" "
"	111,	"	27,	"	J. E. Baynes	read G. E. Baynes.
"	122,	"	31,	"	Miller	read Mellor.
"	"	"	"	"	Schlelter	read Schletter.
"	"	"	32,	"	O. D. C. Gratton	read O'D. C. Grattan.
"	"	"	34,	"	J. C. Stevenson	read C. J. Steavenson.
"	"	"	"	"	T. M. Jones	read L. M. Jones.
"	123,	"	1,	"	Harrington	read Harington.
"	"	"	"	"	Pinnell	read Pinwell.
"	"	"	2,	"	Howard-Vesi	read Howard-Vyse.
"	"	"	3,	"	D. J. Watt	read D. Y. Watt.
"	"	"	"	"	Lieutenant or Quarter-	read Lieutenant and Quarter-
"	147,	"	31,	"	Jones, Major R. B.	read Jones, Major R. C. R.
"	149,	"	41,	"	Ealough	read Eatough.
"	151,	"	39,	"	June	read May.
"	192,	"	23,	"	Hartington	read Harington.
"	193,	"	6,	"	Perry	read Percy.
"	197,	"	16,	"	"	" "
"	195,	"	13,	"	attached Manchester Regiment	read Manchester Regiment, attached The King's.
"	193,				Awards of Military Cross to four officers, <i>vide</i> London Gazette of June 26, are again inserted on p. 197 under extracts from the Gazette of June 24, 1916.	

---

### MENTIONED IN DESPATCHES BY SIR JOHN FRENCH.

*February 1915.*

BANNATYNE, Lieut.-Colonel W. S. (killed in action).  
 STEAVENSON, Major C. J.  
 HUDSON, Captain P.  
 RYAN, Lieut. J. H. A.  
 CONNOLLY, No. 8564 Coy. Sergt.-Major J. (killed in action).  
 HALLIWELL, No. 8701 Pte. S.  
 MARSH, No. 10692 Pte. H. H.

---

To be Brevet Lieut.-Colonel, Major C. J. STEAVENSON.  
 To be Brevet Major, Captain P. HUDSON.  
 Awarded the Military Cross, Lieut. J. H. A. RYAN.

---

## *Errata and Addenda*

---

### *March 1915.*

CARTER, Lieut.-Colonel B. C. M.	YOUNG, Lieut. P. M. (S. R. attached 1st) (killed).
CAINE, No. 11937 Pte. G. (died of wounds).	MADDEN, Sec.-Lieut. T. H. (killed).
DAWSON, No. 8585 Pte. T.	O'DONOGHUE, Sec.-Lieut. H. P. (killed).
DOYLE, No. 11459 Pte S.	EVANS, No. 11930 Sergt. A.
UPTON, No. 10732 Drummer L.	CUFFLIN, No. 9034 Act.-Corpl. W.
FENERAN, Capt. F. E. (killed).	WAGSTAFF, No. 8948 L.-Corpl. G.
BAKER, Lieut. E. B. (S. R. attached 1st).	BEECH, No. 9096 Pte. F. F.
MILLER, Lieut. G. W.	EASTWOOD, No. 11635 Pte. J.
WEBB, Lieut. H. M. T. (S. R. attached 1st) (killed).	SMITH, No. 5872, Pte. T.
	WELSH, No. 6282 Pte. J.

---

### ARMY LIST.

*Page 208.* 2nd Lieut. E. B. Gollin was appointed to 13th (Service) Battalion on December 22, 1914, not to the 15th (Reserve) Battalion. He reached the rank of captain, and died of wounds in France June 14, 1917.

H. P.

W.  
G.

or  
it  
is



LORD FERRERS, THE FOUNDER OF THE REGIMENT  
AND FIRST COLONEL.

# THE STORY OF THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL REGIMENT)

## CHAPTER I

EARLY YEARS, 1685-1700

The Origin of the King's (Liverpool Regiment)—Famous Colonels—The Portsmouth Captains—Campaign in Ireland.

A GREAT regiment is like a stately oak, it gathers strength and dignity with years. It is embodied tradition. Its past inspires reverence and respect; its present, admiration and courage; its future, confidence and hope. Firmly planted in its native soil, it survives the changes and stress of fretting years. Its memory is imperishable, and its heroic deeds are amongst the most treasured possession of a nation. Though the stately fanes of ancient Rome are in ruins, the stirring story of Cæsar's Tenth Legion still sets the warm blood of youth pulsing and re-peoples the earth with martial forms. And though the ancient vikings, the English archers of Crecy and Agincourt, the Janissaries of the early Turkish Sultans, the Maison du Roy of the old French kings, the giant grenadiers of Frederick William of Prussia, and the

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

Old Guard of Napoleon have long been numbered with the past, yet they are always with us, throwing a lurid light on many a grim page of history and ever beckoning eager youth to the fields of glory and romance. Seers, poets, and reformers notwithstanding, when the sword is beaten into the ploughshare the spice of adventure will have gone out of life; indeed, the world will be a mighty dull place.

The time-honoured regiments of the British army deserve well of the people. They have never been the slaves of despotism, and have very rarely come into conflict with the democracy. They have taken the name and fame of the Motherland to every quarter of the globe. Their blood has been shed as freely on the plains of India, in the primeval forests of the New World and the burning deserts of Egypt, in the fever-laden swamps of Equatorial Africa, by the banks of the lordly Danube and the mighty Zambesi, as it has been in Belgium during the last three centuries. The pioneers of the race laid no claim to culture, and never sought to dragoon the native mind into that of semblance to the average Briton, yet the one outstanding fact, which amazes the world to-day, is the sublime unity of this empire of varied colours, castes, religious opinions and systems of government, all combined to fight to the death in defence of a rule forced upon them in many cases by conquest. The empire owes much to its great pro-consuls, but the simple, unobtrusive, tolerant and genial British soldier has proved a marvellous missionary, and has, though quite unconsciously, done much to popularise his country amongst alien races.

The Commonwealth laid the foundation of a standing army, but it made such little headway that

---

### *Lord Ferrers raises it*

---

during the reign of Charles II it only consisted of 8000 men, entailing a cost of £280,000 per year. With the advent of James II, however, the regular army grew rapidly. In 1685 it was 20,000 strong, 3000 of this number being in Tangier, 7800 in Ireland, 2800 in Scotland, and about 6900 in England. But popular discontent was rife, and the low murmur of rebellion filled the air. The King lent a ready ear to the suggestion of his supporters, and assented to the raising of additional regiments. Amongst those authorised to undertake the task was Lord Ferrers of Chartley, son of that Sir Robert Shirley who paid for his devotion to the First Charles by a long imprisonment in the Tower, where he died. The baronet's son was one of the men to whom Charles II showed some gratitude, for he was raised to the peerage and given a post of honour at Court. Commissioned to raise a regiment in Hertfordshire, Derbyshire and London, Ferrers had little difficulty in obtaining the men. The Royal Warrant stipulated that the regiment was to consist of ten companies made up of musketeers and pikemen, in accordance with the practice of the time, and it was to bear the title "The Princess Anne of Denmark's Regiment of Foot," as a compliment to the future Queen, who had married a Danish prince. The first company was raised in Hertfordshire, where Ferrers was a considerable landowner; the second by John Beaumont, in Derbyshire; the third by John Innes, in London; and the other seven in Derbyshire by Rowland Okeover, Charles Chad, Thomas Paston, William Cook, Simeon Parke, Walter Burdet and Thomas Orme. As eight out of the ten companies were raised in Derbyshire it was fitting that the headquarters of the regiment



---

## *The Royal Warrant*

---

should be at Derby. These officers were for the most part considerable landowners, who were prepared to spend money on the undertaking, for they had not only to pay for the raising and clothing of the men, but also for their equipment. The State was supposed to maintain the regiment, but it did the work in a bungling and half-hearted manner that left the widest possible doors open for corruption and favouritism.

So popular was the movement that although the Royal Warrant was only issued on June 20, 1685, Major Innes' company was complete by the 26th, when orders were received for it to proceed from Islington to Holloway.

These great districts are now a human beehive palpitating with industry, but in those days they breathed pastoral peace and plenty, and we may well carry our imaginations back through the 230 intervening years. The scene was a typical one of the Merry England which was already faintly responding to the fuller life of Imperial glory. We can picture this company of the newly-formed regiment standing awkwardly at attention on the wide common, now abridged to the sorry plot known as Islington Green; but the wayfarers and villagers are delighted at the unaccustomed spectacle, and unstinted in their admiration at the gay appearance of the little body. That is not surprising, for the new uniform is both striking and peculiar. It consists of a long scarlet coat turned up with yellow, yellow breeches and waistcoat, white cravat, broad-brimmed hat with one side turned up and adorned with yellow ribbon, white stockings and serviceable shoes. The captains alone carry pikes, the men being armed with halberts, but seventy-five

---

## *The Men's Equipment*

---

of the latter bear a clumsy long-barrelled musket and a sword. Across the breast of each man, bandolier-wise, is a thick leather strap, to which is affixed by stout string the canister-like packages of powder and ball for twenty or a couple of dozen rounds. At the tap of the drum the company forms fours, the boy drummer steps to the front, the quick tap, tap which is soon to become familiar to half the people of Europe resounds, and the second company of what is ultimately to become the King's Liverpool Regiment moves on to the great highway.

Little did the good people who watched the proud company march up that country lane foresee the grim destiny which awaited the regiment as it strode manfully into the future. Could they have gazed into the mirror of time they would have seen the King's Regiment winning imperishable glory, not only in every quarter of the then known world, but in vast and yet undiscovered lands. They would have found it forming part of British armies which fought and vanquished French and German, Arab and Turk, Boer and Sepoy, African savage and American kinsmen as well as Burman dacoit and West Indian carib, while its toll of killed and wounded during the coming two and a quarter centuries would exceed 20,000 men.

The regiment was being hastily armed and rigorously drilled when the battle of Sedgemoor took place on July 6, but these preparations were abandoned with the suppression of the Monmouth Rebellion, and three weeks later the strength of each company was reduced to two sergeants, three corporals, two drummers and fifty rank and file in addition to the officers. Soon afterwards it was ordered to London, and at the beginning of August we find it being reviewed on

---

## *Colonel the Duke of Berwick*

---

Hounslow Heath by King James. It was ordered to Chester a month later, and soon after was stationed at Berwick.

The King's interest in the regiment was shown in a marked manner, for when Lord Ferrers surrendered the position of Colonel-in-Chief in 1687, it was promptly bestowed upon the Duke of Berwick, natural son of the King and nephew of John Churchill the coming Duke of Marlborough. Although the regiment has been commanded by many celebrated soldiers, none was so illustrious as this unhappy prince, whose life was one long romance. Possessing the Churchill military genius, he took up the career of arms when only fifteen, and had acquired a distinct reputation before he was eighteen. He helped to defeat the Turks and to crush the Germans; in fact, he fought on every battlefield from the Danube to the Tagus, commanded at Almanza, and ultimately became one of the greatest and most successful of the Marshals of France. An ideal soldier, honourable, clear-headed, clean-living, respected by monarchs, adored by soldiers, revered by the people through whose country he marched, he stood out a lonely figure of incorruptibility in a dissolute and corrupt age. Ever averse to the enterprises of the Pretender, he would be no party to delivering up his native land to the horrors of civil war, and was too young to play a part in suppressing the Monmouth Rebellion. Had fortune placed him on the throne in place of his obstinate father, he would have been the most popular of monarchs, and he would certainly have re-shaped the map of Europe to some purpose. Unfortunately his short experience with the English army was by no means a happy one.

In August 1686 Princess Anne's Regiment pro-



JAMES, DUKE OF BERWICK. SECOND COLONEL..



---

## *The Portsmouth Captains*

---

ceeded to Portsmouth, where it became the focus of one of those movements which do so much to shape the fortunes of dynasties and peoples. In these days of toleration the question of creeds plays no part in public appointments, but in the days of the Commonwealth and the Stuarts it was otherwise. Among the unjust regulations then in force was one disqualifying Roman Catholics from serving in the army. It was a heritage of the Civil War, and it worked untold mischief in the community. It was an injustice against which the King never ceased to fight, but unfortunately for himself and his house he endeavoured to rectify a wrong by trampling on the Constitution he had sworn to defend, and by adopting a system of petty persecution which aroused general contempt.

A number of Roman Catholic recruits had been brought from Ireland for enrolment in one of the newly-formed regiments, but as there were no vacancies orders were given that they must be incorporated in Princess Anne of Denmark's Regiment. The result was in every way disastrous. The officers of the regiment regarded this as an infringement of the Constitution and a breach of the conditions under which they had raised the corps, and memorialised their Colonel, the Duke of Berwick, to the effect that their numbers were complete, and that if recruits were needed there were plenty of orthodox Englishmen to be had. They also intimated that they would surrender their commissions rather than be parties to such an outrage on the law. Having passed this memorial on to the King, the Duke took no further part in the controversy; but James II was so enraged at the opposition that he sent a cornet and twenty cuirassiers of what is now the Sixth Dragoon Guards

---

## *Colonel John Beaumont*

---

to Portsmouth to arrest the six offenders, to wit, Lieut.-Colonel John Beaumont and Captains Paston, Pack, Orme, Port and Cook. They were afterwards tried by court-martial and dismissed the service. They were afterwards informed that if they would give way they would be reinstated, but they stood to their guns and were accordingly cashiered. Everywhere regarded as martyrs, the Portsmouth captains became popular heroes. Ballads were composed in their honour, and their portraits were circulated by the hundred. They were fêted and toasted and flattered in public and private, and speedily became the centre of an agitation which never ceased until King James was dethroned. The discontent spread to the rank and file, and many men of the regiment deserted rather than serve under officers whom they detested. Alarmed at the storm, and perceiving too late what a mistake he had made, the King offered to repay to Colonel Beaumont and his colleagues the expense they had incurred in raising the regiment. But like all the second thoughts of the Stuarts it availed nothing. James had lost the confidence of men once solely devoted to him, and he reaped the whirlwind in the shape of the Revolution.

On the accession of William III, the leader of the Portsmouth captains came to his own again, for John Beaumont, the cashiered Lieut.-Colonel, was appointed Colonel of his old regiment. He commanded it during the Irish campaign, and died in 1701. But little glory or honour was to be won in Ireland, and though the regiment took part in the Battle of the Boyne and in the sieges of Kinsale and Limerick, its members were glad to see the last of the Civil War. Abortive expeditions to the coasts of Normandy and Flanders and a lengthy sojourn in Ireland were the regiment's



THE PORTSMOUTH CAPTAINS.





---

## *Service in Ireland*

---

contributions to the closing years of the seventeenth century.

In 1701 the throb of the war drum once more resounded throughout Europe. It was due to a revival of the old quarrel over the Spanish succession. For over half a century well-nigh every race and community on the Continent was to be harried and taxed, dragooned, drilled and slaughtered because King Louis of France had resolved that a Bourbon should sit on the Spanish throne. It was another variant of the vicious dream of universal dominion which has cursed humanity from the days of Rameses the Great to those of William II of Germany.

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER II

#### MARLBOROUGH'S EARLY CAMPAIGNS, 1701-JULY 1704

How the Regiment saved the British Army at Nimeguen—The Battle of the Schellenberg.

HAD the history of the King's (Liverpool Regiment) been confined to the thirteen years it spent on the Continent at the beginning of the eighteenth century, it would still have formed an entrancing picture of military glory. During that short period the battles of Blenheim, Ramillies and Oudenarde were fought; the great fortresses of Tournai, Venloo, Liège and Namur were captured by the British and their Allies; the Netherlands, after a century of oppression, were cleared of the enemy; and the traditional military prestige of France was eclipsed by the genius of Prince Eugène and the Duke of Marlborough. Nor was this all. Had the sagacious counsel of the great Duke not been rejected by the rancour of unscrupulous political enemies at home, the Allied armies would have entered Paris in triumph, and have dictated such terms to the French monarch as would have ensured a long and beneficent peace to Europe. But the golden opportunity passed, and Europe drew nearer the abyss.

---

## *Princess Anne's Regiment*

---

On June 15, 1701, Princess Anne's Regiment embarked at Cork for Holland, and arrived at Helvoetsluys on July 8. The fact that a voyage which can now be accomplished in two days should then take three weeks, only gives a faint idea of the innumerable hardships and privations of the soldier's life at that period. The transports were invariably discarded old merchantmen hastily fitted up with an absolute disregard of health, sanitation and comfort. The ships were broad-beamed and evil-smelling, and groaned and sighed perpetually. In rough weather when these unwieldy barques sprang a leak the soldiers had to work night and day at the pumps. Packed like herrings in a barrel, the want of fresh vegetables, passable food and pure water caused scurvy and fever. It was quite a common event at the end of a voyage for one-half of the men to be on the sick list, and when the troops landed it was imperative that they should have three or four weeks' rest in order to recuperate. Well might they regard the fiercest onslaught of the enemy as something in the nature of a picnic when compared with the horrors of the voyage, and a number invariably deserted rather than undergo the terrors of the return journey.

It was not, however, until the summer of 1702 that the tramp of soldiers began to shake the Continent. The French had mustered a huge force of 450,000 men—an army relatively as big as that possessed by France to-day, when the difference of population is considered. Hoping to surprise and overwhelm the Allied command of 20,000 men, a great French army, 60,000 strong, under the Duke of Burgundy, made a series of forced marches to the Rhine, but failing to cross it quickly and secretly so

---

### *Re-named the Queen's, 1702*

---

alarmed Lord Athlone, the Allied commander, that he ordered a hurried retreat to Nimeguen. The Eighth Regiment—which had been re-named the Queen's on the accession of Queen Anne in March—was deputed to act as rearguard. Never was an honourable and dangerous duty more courageously performed. The French realised that their prospective prey was in the act of escaping, and pressed eagerly forward through that oppressive June night. Contesting every inch of the ground, laying ambuscades in the dark forest and the rock-strewn ravines, and taking advantage of every inch of cover, the brave Queen's, commanded by Colonel Richmond Webb, one of the ablest officers of his day, poured such a telling fire into the enemy's advance guard as held them in check and secured a respite for the retreating army. The sorely-harassed Allied troops had just cause for joy when the brightening dawn of June 11 showed them the grey walls of the ancient fortress of Nimeguen and the smiling faces of the Dutch burghers. They were safe. Speaking of the retreat, General Kane, who was present, says: "Half an hour more would have done our business; the artillery and baggage, having the short cut, got safe." The Queen's lost heavily, but they had saved the army, and that was equivalent to the winning of a battle.

Happily reinforcements soon arrived, and, what was of greater importance than the advent of an army, the Duke of Marlborough came. Doubt and hesitation were now at an end, and the era of victory was inaugurated. Having succeeded in drawing the enemy further into the Netherlands, Marlborough threw his army across the available highways to France and thereby cut off the French army. He

---

## *Nimeguen and After*

---

next laid siege to Venloo, and on being threatened by the returning enemy, gave orders for the formidable fortress to be taken by assault. It was a difficult and dangerous enterprise, more a forlorn hope than an ordinary storming operation, but, although it promised certain death, those who were chosen were envied by the entire army. Two companies of the Queen's, one of them the grenadier company, were picked out.

The attack was entrusted to Lord Cutts, the "Salamander," a designation he had won because he was always to be found in the midst of the hottest fire. Delighting in impossible tasks, he set the ordinary rules of war at defiance, and by sheer audacity so confounded the enemy that he often succeeded where steadier and more prudent men would have failed. The especially difficult task of capturing Fort St. Michael, a strongly fortified castle on the left bank of the Meuse, was entrusted to him. Its garrison was strong, alert and thoroughly experienced in all the arts of war. This stronghold defended Venloo on one side, was connected with it by a bridge of boats, and was provisioned for a lengthy siege. According to every military tenet it was impregnable. But the "Salamander" thought otherwise. On September 7th the trenches were dug, on the 16th the batteries opened fire, and on the 18th a mixed body of men selected from nearly every besieging regiment mustered for the assault. Three companies of the Queen's, one of them the grenadiers, headed the storming party, and a squad of 320 workmen brought up the rear. The town clocks were striking four when a deafening volley from the Allied batteries gave the signal to advance. With a burst of cheers the resolute assailants dashed up the covered way, paused a moment to

---

## *The Taking of Venloo*

---

take aim, and then hurled their grenades into the midst of the astonished defenders. Quickly recovering, however, from their confusion, the French garrison responded to such purpose that many of the assailants were shot down. But the survivors were not to be denied. Sweeping everything before them, they ultimately carried the fortress and thereby hastened the surrender of Venloo.

Captain Parker, of the Royal Irish, took part in this assault, and the account he gives in his *Memoirs* might have been written yesterday instead of 213 years ago—

“The Salamander had said,” observed the Captain, “if the enemy fled we were to jump into the covered way and pursue them, let the consequence be what it would. We all thought these very rash orders, contrary both to the rules of war and the design of the thing. They made to a ravelin which covered the curtain of the fort, in which were a captain and sixty men. We, seeing them get into the ravelin, pursued them, got in with them, and soon put most of them to the sword. They that escaped fled over a small wooden bridge that led over the mote to the fort. However, we got over the *fausse braye*, where we had nothing for it but to take the fort or die. They that fled before us climbed up by the long grass that grew out of the fort, so we climbed after them. Here we were hard put to it to pull out the palisades which pointed down upon us from the parapet, and was it not for the surprise and consternation of those within we could never have surmounted this very point. But as soon as they saw us at this work, they quitted the ramparts and retired down to the parade in the body of the fort, where they laid down their arms and cried for quarter, which was readily granted them. . . . The garrison consisted of 1500 men, which were more than the party which attacked them. They had about 100 killed, and, what was strange, we had but twenty-seven killed and about as many wounded.”

Thereafter the strongholds of France in the Low Countries fell in rapid succession, the Queen's grenadier company taking a prominent part in the assaults on Ruremonde, Liège, Chartreuse and Bonn. So greatly

---

## *March to Bavaria, 1704*

---

had the regiment distinguished itself, that when the Duke of Marlborough reviewed it in April 1703, he took the opportunity to compliment it warmly on its drill, discipline and conduct. Praise from such a leader was praise indeed.

The spring of 1704 found Marlborough in command of a well-equipped Allied army 50,000 strong. It comprised British and Dutch, Hanoverians, Hessians, Danes and Saxons, as well as contingents from the smaller Germanic States. They had nothing in common save love of their country, hatred of the enemy and confidence in the Duke of Marlborough. April was drawing to a close when this many-tongued army passed into the Rhine Provinces, crossed the great river as well as the Moselle, and presently appeared before Mainz. Its destination was a profound mystery to all save the British commander, even the princes commanding the racial detachments being in ignorance. Towards the end of June the town of Mundelheim was reached. Here the great English general and the famous Prince Eugène met for the first time, and a friendship, remarkable for its sincerity, lack of rivalry, and mutual esteem, was established.

On the following day the two leaders reviewed the British cavalry, which had ridden on in advance of the artillery and infantry. In expressing his admiration the Prince gave utterance to sentiments which were strangely prophetic of the position to-day—

“ I have heard much of the English cavalry, and find it indeed to be the finest and best-appointed I have ever seen. Money, of which you have no want in England, can buy clothes and accoutrements, but nothing can purchase the spirit which I see in the looks of your men. It is an earnest of victory.”

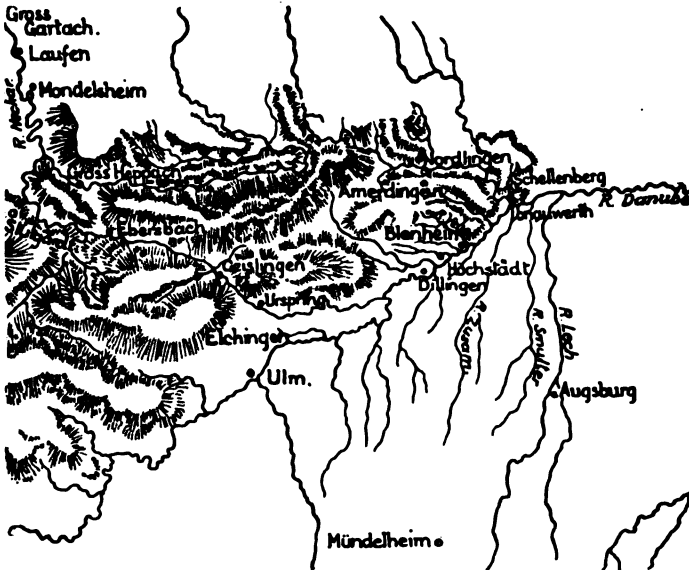


---

## *March to Bavaria*

---

On this occasion the main body of the Allies performed one of those amazing marches which are as epoch-making as a great battle. The march through Würtemberg had been long and arduous, but it was child's play in comparison with the passage of the mountains separating that kingdom from Bavaria.



MARLBOROUGH'S MARCH TO BLENHEIM, JUNE TO AUGUST, 1704.

The long and rugged Pass of Geislingen, especially, presented well-nigh insuperable difficulties. It was narrow, tortuous and boulder-strewn. Here and there beetling crags frowned menacing, precipices threatened destruction, and in many places the ascent was so steep that unfettered horses scaled it with difficulty. Guns, ammunition and baggage-wagons had to be

---

## *Hardships of the Regiment*

---

drawn up with ropes, and the Queen's Regiment, in common with the rest of the infantry, took their share of this arduous duty. To make matters worse, torrential rains had fallen for several days and the roads and bypaths had become raging torrents. Hungry, soaked to the skin, chilled to the bone and thoroughly exhausted, the uncomplaining host struggled on for forty-eight hours, until the dreadful summit was passed and they descended into the smiling valley of Urspring, where their commanders and mounted comrades awaited them.

In a letter to the Duchess of Marlborough the Duke refers to this remarkable exploit in the following words—

"I am very confident, without flattering myself, that the march was the only thing capable of saving us from ruin, so that whatever the success may be, I shall have the inward satisfaction of knowing that I have done all that was in my power; and that none can be angry with me for the undertaking but such as wish ill to this country and religion, and with such I am not desirous of their friendship."

This expedition into the heart of Germany had been undertaken with the clear and well-defined object of detaching the Elector of Bavaria from the French Alliance. Swayed by ambition, caring little for the welfare of his subjects, and a victim to the hereditary mental weakness and animus which have distinguished this family for centuries (seen also in the wild and foolish rhapsodies of Prince Rupprecht of Bavaria on the battlefields of Belgium in 1914-16), the Elector had allied himself with the King of France in order to win for himself a dominant position in the Empire. Whereas other people had risen against their mad and wicked rulers, the patient, long-suffering and

---

## *Battle of the Schellenberg*

---

essentially peace-loving Bavarians have endured the infliction for centuries, and are still a prey to it.

Time was of supreme importance to the Allies. Although the arrival of the Prince of Baden had brought their army up to 60,000 men with forty-eight guns, the combined French and Bavarian forces far exceeded this number, and they also expected the arrival at any time of strong reinforcements from the Rhine Provinces.

After a brief rest the Allies proceeded to Ulm on the left bank of the Danube. The enemy were concentrated at Donauwörth, an old-world town on the river. The key of their position was the Schellenberg, a conical hill which protruded like a spur into this eight-mile-wide part of the Danubian valley. Its flat summit was about half a mile wide in diameter, and though one side sloped gently the others were broken, rugged and thickly wooded. It was an ideal defensive position, and in the hands of capable military engineers could be made practically impregnable. Although the distance from their encampment to Donauwörth was only twelve miles, and the Confederate army began their march at three in the morning, they did not reach the foot of the Schellenberg until two o'clock on the afternoon of July 3. Observing many workmen engaged in throwing up entrenchments on the slope of the hill, Marlborough said to the Prince of Baden, who counselled delay, "Either the enemy will escape or will have time to finish their work. In the latter case, the loss of a single hour will cost the loss of a thousand men." It was six o'clock when the Duke, having selected a force of a thousand men from the fourteen British foot regiments, the three Dragoon regiments and the German auxiliaries, sent them into

---

## *The Queen's in the Assault*

---

the woods to make faggots wherewith to fill up the enemy's trenches. Then the signal was given to advance. The grenadier company of the Guards led, then came the Buffs and The Royal Scots, followed by the Queen's. After the trenches had been filled with the fascines, isolated parties rushed at the undefended parts in the hope of forcing a way through, while the main body swept along the front searching for suitable openings through which to climb.

The Bavarians were sturdy fighters then as now. They countered this movement with such a devastating fire as caused the assailants to give ground, although the Guards, the Buffs, The Royal Scots and the Queen's stood firm. Surprised and encouraged by their apparent success, and believing that the Allies were too broken to re-form, the Bavarians issued from their shelter and fell upon the hesitating troops with the bayonet. Happily the British troops, which had stood their ground, met this onslaught with such a well-sustained fire, that the Bavarians were driven back. Then it was that the Duke of Marlborough once more exhibited that dauntless courage he was wont to show on great occasions. Dashing forward he re-formed the wavering troops, and placing himself at their head, advanced to the attack. But the result was the same. Matters were looking very serious for the Allies, when the indomitable leader gathered his men together and led them forward for the third assault. While the issue was still in the balance, and the struggling host was at close grips with the bayonet, welcome and somewhat unexpected help came. The Prince of Baden's troops, several thousands strong, were seen advancing from the left. After crushing two French battalions and sweeping

---

## *The Schellenberg, 1704*

---

the shattered remains of others aside, the men of Baden swarmed over the ramparts, and fell so furiously on the flank of the enemy as to divert their attention and to enable the British, now reinforced by the dismounted Scots Greys, to press home their attack on the centre. Forcing their way through the defences, the English swept all before them. The defeat of the enemy was complete, and the Allied cavalry soon turned it into a rout.

Of the 12,000 French and Bavarians who had awaited the attack with such confidence only 3000 escaped. Many were cut down in the pursuit, but the greater number were drowned in the Danube. According to the *Postman* of July 13, 1704, the British lost twenty-nine officers and 409 men killed, and eighty-six officers and 1031 wounded, or a total of 1555. Of the 130 members of the Queen's Regiment selected for the attack, Ensign Savage and seven men were killed, while Ensigns Besier and Mason and thirty-one men were wounded, or a total loss of forty-one. The loss of the Allies was certainly a heavy one, 1500 killed and 5000 wounded.

This victory had an important bearing on the epoch-making Battle of Blenheim. It was the first shattering blow which the Allies dealt to the Elector of Bavaria. It inspired the Allied Governments with courage and confidence in the Duke of Marlborough, and it firmly established the right of Great Britain to have a deciding voice in the destiny of small nations. Thus, for the second time in its short history, had the Queen's assisted to strike a shrewd blow on behalf of the principles dear to the heart of the British race.

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER III

#### BLenheim, AUGUST 1704

Harrying the Bavarians—The Duke of Marlborough and his Contemporaries—The Battle of Blenheim.

NOTHING more strongly illustrates the fear in which the Duke of Marlborough was held by his enemies than the fact that such renowned French Marshals as Villiers, Tallard and Boufflers not only selected the strongest positions to await his attacks, but invariably began feverishly to strengthen such positions, even when their armies greatly outnumbered those under his command. The Netherlands campaign of 1702-3 had demonstrated the eclipse of old-fashioned strategy and the effectiveness of the long-neglected policy of the offensive. Marlborough seldom waited to be attacked, but in nearly every instance adopted a quick offensive, thereby anticipating the methods of Frederick the Great, Napoleon and the modern Germans. Like Napoleon he saw at a glance the weak point of an enemy, and with unerring judgment chose the best possible striking force, and dealt his blow at the psychological moment when it would be most effective. He was equally fortunate in possessing a thoroughly reliable weapon. The French Emperor put unflinching trust in his Old Guard, and Marlborough

---

## *Marlborough's Infantry*

---

placed similar reliance on his steadfast British; indeed, from this period dates the reputation of our foot regiments as the best infantry in Europe. Again, both were fruitful in surprises; both had the audacity of genius, and both took risks which smaller and more discreet generals would have avoided.

Although Napoleon mainly relied on his artillery, and Marlborough on his matchless infantry, there is considerable similarity in the strategy of the principal battles of these consummate leaders, and it is a fascinating study to compare Blenheim with Jena and Ramillies with Austerlitz.

The Elector of Bavaria had taken shelter under the guns of Augsburg, and awaited the arrival of Marshal Tallard with an army of 45,000 men. As he repelled Marlborough's many overtures to detach him from the French Alliance, and showed the greatest determination to resume the struggle, the British commander was reluctantly compelled to adopt energetic steps to bring him to reason. The Count le Tour and the Duke of Württemberg were sent out with a mass of light and irregular troops to harry the country. They burned 300 towns and villages and carried fire and sword to the gates of Munich, but otherwise treated the inhabitants with consideration and refrained from practising the gospel of "frightfulness" with which the twentieth-century Germans are identified. This policy, however, was extremely repugnant to the Duke of Marlborough, as one of his letters to the Duchess shows.

Compelled at last by the sufferings of his subjects to make an effort in favour of peace, the Elector opened up negotiations with the Allies, but these had not proceeded far when the near approach of the French

---

## *Manœuvring before Blenheim*

---

army gave him an excuse for breaking them off. The combined French and Bavarian forces now totalled 60,000 men with ninety guns, while the strength of the Allies was 56,000 men and sixty-six guns. It was an even more heterogeneous host than the great barbarian army which had crossed Europe in the fifth century, for it was made up of British, Prussians, Dutch, Danes, Austrians, Badeners, Hessians, Croatians and Hanoverians, as well as other detachments from the smaller States of Central and South-Eastern Europe. Wanting in sympathy, lacking a common patriotism, practising the most divergent customs and habits, and viewing the questions of liberty and government from the most widely-different standpoints, it needed the combined genius of Prince Eugène and the Duke of Marlborough to instil order and discipline into this turbulent mass and make them sink their racial jealousies and antagonisms. To engage in battle with the help of such opposing elements seemed little short of madness, but to win a great victory with them was one of those miracles beyond the wit of man to explain.

Again the question of time was of supreme importance. The leaders of the Allies had taken opportunity by the forelock and had crossed the Danube three days after the Battle of the Schellenberg, when the enemy was in no condition to oppose them. Safely encamped on Bavarian soil, they had leisure to prepare their plan of campaign. In the meantime the enemy was mustering in strength for the inevitable battle. One French army under Marshal Tallard crossed the Rhine on July 1st, and moved steadily towards the Danube. Soon afterwards Marshal Villeroy with the second French army crossed the first-named river at Strasburg, and twice sent powerful reinforcements



---

## *Battle of Blenheim*

---

to his colleague. When Villeroy joined hands with the Elector of Bavaria towards the end of July their army, as we have already seen, considerably outnumbered that of the Allies, but, resolved to leave nothing to chance, they took possession of the heights in the neighbourhood of Hochstadt. It was a strong and well-defined position. It commanded the valley of the Danube, and the marshy tributaries of the river made a frontal attack extremely difficult. It was next to impossible to outflank, for while the village of Blenheim on the extreme right abutted on the river, the extreme left was protected by thick woods and rugged country broken up by numerous ravines. The object of Marshal Tallard and the Elector was to defer an engagement until the arrival of Marshal Villeroy, or until the Allies had become so exhausted by want of supplies as to be compelled to leave the country. As time, therefore, was on the side of the French and Bavarians, they patiently settled down to wait until starvation had played havoc with the invaders.

Although the wiseacres might pronounce the situation sufficiently strong, the French and Bavarian commanders were not satisfied. They had already seen how Marlborough's genius had confounded the military schoolmen. They knew that strongholds reputed impregnable had crumbled under his assaults. They remembered Venloo and the Schellenberg. Although satisfied that there was not sufficient firm ground on their front for the manœuvres of the Allied army, they resolved to improve their advantage still further. Not only did they throw up strong entrenchments at every available point, but they erected strong palisades around the greater part of Blenheim, the key to their position.

---

*August 13, 1704*

---

But this excessive caution proved the undoing of the defending army. In their anxiety to circumscribe the movements of the Allies, Marshal Tallard and the Elector committed two vital mistakes. They crowded 60,000 men in a narrow front of four miles, and thereby seriously hampered their own evolutions. Given more ground, they could have used their superiority in numbers to the greatest advantage at the most critical moment of the battle. They also made the fatal blunder of massing their cavalry in the centre of the army. Although this was obviously done because the ground there was firmer, the effect was to cut their army in two, thereby preventing that co-operation which is one of the essentials of military success. The custom at that time was to station the mounted troops at the two extremities, so that they could be effectually used at the most critical moment. Marlborough was quick to note these mistakes and to take the fullest advantage of them. The disposition of the Allied forces showed with what quickness he could adapt himself to the most rapidly changing conditions.

At two o'clock in the morning of August 13, 1704, the Allies broke up their camp and began their five-mile march towards the enemy. At six they came well within gunshot of it, but so poor an outpost was there, that the first intimation Marshal Tallard had of the proximity of the Allied army was when the village of Unterglau burst into flames, and soon afterwards the rising haze disclosed the massed formations of the troops. Arming and spurring followed in hot haste the preparation for the attack. The Elector was in command of the left wing, Marsin, who had not hitherto commanded any considerable

---

## *The Regiment in Hamilton's Brigade*

---

body of men, was responsible for the French centre, and Marshal Tallard for the right wing—the most important point in and around Blenheim. Here the flower of the French army was stationed, with several 24-pounders.

Marlborough opened fire at eight o'clock, but it was one before the two armies came to grips. A considerable time was occupied in filling up a small ravine, in repairing a stone bridge which carried the road to Donauwörth, and in throwing several pontoon bridges over the marsh through which the little Nebel flowed. As this little stream divided just before it entered the Danube—the two branches enclosing a small boggy island—a frontal assault on Blenheim was alike dangerous and difficult. In the meantime Prince Eugène, who was in command of the Allied right, had departed with the Imperial troops and several foreign battalions, to make a wide detour in order to assail the Bavarians, 12,000 strong, who occupied the rising ground in front of the village of Lutzingen.

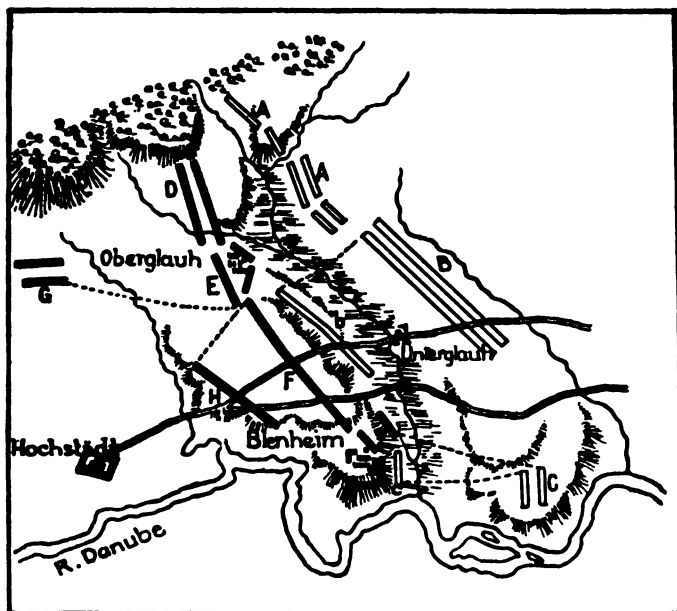
The extreme left of the British position rested on the Danube. Thirteen squadrons of British cavalry, supplemented by some foreign horse, were stationed here. Next in order came fourteen battalions of British infantry. Here again, as was his invariable custom, the Duke placed his fellow-countrymen at the crucial point, where the hardest fighting would take place. This column was under the command of Lord Cutts, the Salamander. Next to the cavalry came Hamilton's brigade, consisting of the Grenadier Guards, The Royal Scots, the 16th and 20th, and the Queen's (King's Liverpool). Rowe's brigade continued the first line. This consisted of the 3rd Buffs,

---

## *The Centre of the First Line*

---

the Royal Scots Fusiliers, the 24th, the Royal Welsh Fusiliers and the 10th. They in turn were supported on the right by several foreign battalions, beginning with the Hessians. Thus the predecessors of the



BATTLE OF BLENHEIM, AUGUST 13, 1704.

A Engines; B, Marlborough; b, Marlborough when across the brook; C, Cutts; c, When assaulting the village; D, Elector of Bavaria; E, Marsin; F, Tallard; G, Bavarians in retreat; H, French in retreat.

King's Liverpools occupied the centre of the first line of that indomitable human wave which was to dash itself against Tallard's strongly entrenched front, manned by 30,000 of the best troops of France, until it won through at last and thereby decided one of the great battles which was to re-shape the map of Europe.

---

## *Blenheim*

---

Having paid particular attention to the placing of his guns the British commander had prayers read, after which he rode along the entire front encouraging and exhorting the men. In the midst of this inspection a round shot from one of the enemy's pieces struck the ground under his horse and enveloped the rider in such a cloud of dust that the horrified onlookers thought that he had been killed. When the red-coated rider appeared again, serene and smiling, the relief was so great that a burst of cheering swept along the line, alarming the enemy and giving them some indication of what was in store for them.

Marshal Tallard saw from the presence of the red-coats where the most severe fighting would take place, and sent a force of cavalry to close up the opening between Blenheim and the Danube. He also packed the village with his superb infantry.

At 12.30 Lord Cutts was ordered to attack, and sent Rowe's brigade forward. They crossed the stream near the old mill, and having gained a footing on the further bank rushed to the attack. Their orders were not to fire a shot until they reached the barricades, and the enemy took full advantage by exposing themselves boldly and taking careful aim. At last the defences were reached, and Brigadier Rowe struck his sword into the paling, while many of his men grasped the heavy stakes with both hands and endeavoured to tear them down. But it was of no avail. The Brigadier was shot down and two of his staff were killed. Retreating like wounded lions, after losing one-third their number, the British force was not allowed time to re-form, for three squadrons of the French horse fell on them and added to the confusion. The enemy captured the colours of the Royal

---

### *The Regiment crosses the Nebel*

---

Scots Fusiliers, but the French triumph was short-lived, for the Hessians dashed forward and assailing the French horse on the flank recaptured the colours and drove the enemy back.

Strengthened by several squadrons of cavalry, Hamilton's brigade, of which the Queen's formed part, advanced to the attack, and crossing the Nebel under a heavy fire established themselves on the further bank, and even captured the outskirts of Blenheim. They were, however, losing so heavily that the Duke ordered Lord Cutts to withdraw them, but added that the latter must keep up a feigned attack in order to retain as many of the enemy as possible in the village.

It was at this point that the great British leader dealt his master-stroke and showed his superiority over the great captains of his day. Although his first attempt to pierce the enemy's centre with the massed foreign legions failed, he was not to be denied. Gathering a still stronger force together he hurled himself again at the French weak point and succeeded in piercing it. Marsin's cavalry, compelled to fall back, left a great gap, and as Tallard's left also gave way at the same place, the Allied cavalry dashed through, and then dividing to the right and left fell with the greatest fury on the two portions of the divided army. Marsin's force, after a brief resistance, crumpled up, while the picked French horse which sought refuge in Blenheim was driven pell-mell into flight, and hundreds who sought to cross the Danube were drowned. In the meantime the Duke saw that Prince Eugène was in difficulties, having been twice repulsed by the Bavarians. He therefore sent him additional troops, and so enabled him to drive back

---

### *Colonel Richmond Webb*

---

the Elector and ultimately to retire from the field of battle in confusion. But for the fact that darkness had fallen, and that the Duke mistook the retreating forces of the Elector and General Marsin for a portion of Prince Eugène's army, he would have completely annihilated them.

He was now at liberty to devote his undivided attention to the French, who were still making a stand in Blenheim. Here he had the good fortune to capture Marshal Tallard, who was endeavouring to regain his sorely beleaguered infantry after seeing the disaster in his centre. Quick to take advantage of the fact that the enemy's right were now without responsible leadership, the Duke ordered his brother, General Churchill, to advance on the village with all the British infantry and artillery available. Although the French foot bravely resisted, the fortunes of war were against them and they were compelled to surrender; but some of the great historic corps preferred to burn their flags rather than hand them over to the victors.

As the Queen's Regiment did not take part in the initial assault on Blenheim it did not lose so heavily as the Guards, the Buffs and certain other regiments. Nevertheless it played a very distinguished part in the battle. Its colonel, Brigadier-General Richmond Webb, was one of Marlborough's most trusted officers. He had been promoted for the splendid part he and his regiment had played at the Schellenberg, and he was selected for an important duty as this fateful day came to a close. His regiment was placed across the main road leading from Blenheim to the Danube, and it had to bear the brunt of the enemy's panic flight. After barricading themselves in the church and other buildings, the French attempted to retreat

---

## *The Fight outside the Village*

---

by the back of the village where the Queen's were posted. Fighting with the ferocity of despair, the French Guardsmen tried to break through. But their efforts were in vain, and like their comrades they had to surrender. As a result the Queen's took more than a thousand prisoners. With the approach of midnight the exhausted pursuers returned and encamped on the battlefield, after being close on twenty-four hours in action.

The loss of the enemy in killed, wounded, prisoners and deserters was estimated at 40,000, while the Allies had 4500 killed and 7500 wounded, the British loss being 670 and 1500 respectively. The casualties amongst the officers were exceedingly heavy; the Queen's had Major Cornwallis killed and Captain Leonard Lloyd and Lieutenant Bezier wounded. No regimental record of the losses of the rank and file has been kept, and it is needless to speculate about them, but that they were heavy the aggregate total indicates. The omission is all the more remarkable because information regarding other matters is pretty complete. There is, for instance, the Blenheim Bounty Roll. According to the English *Army List*, 1661-1714, pages 42-3, Colonel Richmond Webb of the Queen's received £70 bounty, and the remainder of the regiment were paid as follows:—Major Sutton, £51; eight captains, £30 each; eleven lieutenants, £14 each; Lieutenant Bezier, who was wounded both at the Schellenberg and Blenheim, got £28. Two ensigns each received a bounty of £22, and five others £11 each. The non-commissioned officers and men who received bounty money were thirty-six sergeants, £2 each; thirty-nine corporals, £1 10s. each, and 629 privates (including drummers),



---

## *The Effect of Blenheim*

---

£1 each. Here we have a total of 733 officers and men. Before the battle the regiment had received a strong draft, so that it is evident the battalion was well-nigh at its full strength.

The spoils of war were stupendous. Marshal Tallard and the principal French officers were taken prisoners, the total captures reaching 14,300. Forty-seven guns, twenty-five standards, ninety colours and the whole of the ammunition and camp equipment were taken—a loss which seriously crippled the French armies for months.

With the exception of Waterloo it is doubtful if any battle of modern times had such a profound effect on Europe. Marshal Tallard declared that “France had not received such a blow these hundred years”; in fact, it was much more serious for her than the victory of the Spaniards at St. Quentin in 1557. It altered the European centre of gravity, and its effect on the future was far reaching. But for it, it is probable that the rise of Prussia and the unprincipled campaigns of Frederick the Great would have been impossible. It so shattered the military prestige of France as to make recovery impossible until the flaming genius of Napoleon carried everything before it from the Tagus to the Niemen. It gave Great Britain a commanding voice in the councils of Europe, and stimulated the growth of that vast Colonial empire which was then only in its infancy. It also stamped the Duke of Marlborough as one of the greatest military geniuses in the history of Europe—a genius whose strategy and tactics were frequently copied by Frederick the Great, Napoleon and other great commanders. The fact that his amazing campaigns took place a little over two centuries ago, and under

---

## *Marlborough's Genius*

---

widely different conditions to those now existing, is apt to make people regard them as ancient history, whereas the principles underlying them are as true to-day as when they were laid down by this great Englishman. In the course of this modest chronicle we shall see how amazingly the situation at that time approximates to the most important phases of the Great War.

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER IV

#### RAMILLIES AND OUDENARDE: 1705-1708

How Marlborough forced the French Lines—The Battle of Ramillies—The Battle of Oudenarde.

WHEN the Queen's Regiment entered into winter quarters at Breda in 1704 it had won its laurels. During the year it had taken part in two great battles as well as in the siege of Landau, had marched 1170 miles, and sailed for twelve days down the Rhine in river boats, had lost one-fourth its number, been reviewed and warmly complimented by the Duke of Marlborough, and had seen its beloved Colonel, Richmond Webb, promoted and praised by the leading captains of the age. Thenceforth it was generally recognised as one of the great regiments of Britain.

The following spring found it engaged in a long, weary and abortive march through the mountains of Alsace, whence it returned to reinforce the small army investing the formidable fortress of Huy. When this surrendered three weeks later, the Duke turned his attention to the strong defensive works which the French had carried right across the country with infinite labour and patience. These lines are of especial interest at the present time, when the trench campaign in Flanders has largely assumed the character of a war of exhaustion. They began on the Meuse

---

## *Forcing the French Lines*

---

a little to the east of Namur and stretched to the Little Geete river, proceeded along its left bank to Louw, then followed the course of the Great Geete to the Demer, and, leaving Louvain and Malines some miles to the west, hugged it as far as Aerschot. Then they struck across the country to Antwerp. They were masterpieces of defence. Sheltered by sluggish rivers with steep, muddy banks, they had formidable forts and earthworks at every conceivable vulnerable point; in fact, every device then known to military science had been utilised to strengthen them. In their sinuous course they measured nearly 100 miles. It is worthy of note that they were defended by a combined French, Bavarian and Spanish army of 70,000, thus allowing one man to every two and a quarter yards—a striking difference to the one man per yard now said to be necessary to defend the German lines in the west. When we remember, however, the great help which the Yser Canal rendered to the Germans in resisting the attacks of the Allies, the wisdom of the French military engineers in availing themselves of the river system of the Low Country will be generally admitted. They practically doubled the effectives of the French army.

These lines were generally regarded as impregnable, but they had no terrors for the Duke of Marlborough. It was necessary to force them in order to penetrate into French Flanders. His method of doing so was thoroughly characteristic. He did not waste time in abortive attempts, but struck one blow and one alone. Happily for the success of the movement, airships, searchlights and the other aids to reconnaissance which are so valuable in these days were undreamt of then, and he was thus able to hoodwink the enemy.

---

### *Action on the Little Geete*

---

The British commander began operations by massing a strong force at Meerdorp, as though resolved on piercing the lines at that point. Marshal Villeroy, taking the alarm, rushed several thousand men there, but the Duke had secretly gathered a force of British and Dutch opposite Wanghe on the Little Geete, twenty miles distant. Choosing a conveniently dark night and having divided his force into two columns, the Duke gave orders that one, consisting of Dutch battalions, should move towards Neerhespen, a few miles away, while the second, consisting largely of British troops, the Queen's being amongst the number, should concentrate opposite Wanghe. Up to the last moment very few of the Duke's officers realised what was intended, but when orders were given to throw over pontoon bridges and to repair the broken stone bridge, the British grasped the importance of the work, and their enthusiasm rose accordingly. It was now four o'clock in the morning, and it was obvious that once the French obtained information as to the number of their assailants they would concentrate an overwhelming force to repel them. Without waiting for the bridges to be finished, several companies of picked British battalions, comprising the Guards, The Royal Scots, the Buffs, the Queen's and a couple of other regiments, dashed into the river and, crossing speedily, essayed to swarm up the high, muddy banks. That, however, was a task of considerable difficulty, the more especially as the now thoroughly awakened French lined the top of the bank in constantly increasing numbers and maintained a galling fire on the red-coats as they scrambled up the muddy slope. At last a mixed body of the Queen's, The Royal Scots and the Buffs succeeded in getting over the barriers,

---

### *The Queen's hold the Enemy*

---

checked three regiments of French horse and enabled more troops to cross. As some considerable time, however, elapsed before a strong body of British infantry could win the further shore, the French were able to concentrate fully 15,000 foot soldiers, supported by a force of cavalry. Matters were looking black for the British force which had crossed, when the Duke of Marlborough hastily mustered thirty-seven squadrons of the Allied cavalry, and, placing himself at their head, dashed over the completed bridges, fell upon the massed enemy as they were deploying for an attack, and drove them back in confusion. Quickly recovering, however, the French threw themselves on the Allied horse with such effect as to break them, and it was only by a miracle that the Duke was not cut down by an eager French trooper. Happily the small detachment of the Queen's and their comrades maintained so steady and well-aimed a fire as to check the French, and thereby enabled the Allied cavalry to re-form. When they charged again it was to find the enemy slowly retiring, but in such good order as to offer little opening for effectual assault. Had it not been that the main body of the Allied infantry had been unable to cross the river in time, nothing could have saved the foe from practical annihilation. As it was, he suffered a total loss of 2000 men, with many standards and vast stores of ammunition and baggage. But the victory was complete, for Marlborough had pierced the enemy's lines and was now in a position to pursue an offensive campaign in French Flanders, a consummation only prevented by the timidity and selfishness of the Dutch leaders.

Another winter spent at Breda, coupled with the

---

## *The Campaign of 1706*

---

arrival of a strong draft of recruits, brought the war-worn Queen's up to its highest fighting form, when it kept rendezvous near Mount St. André on May 23, 1706. It was a notable month in a notable year, for it witnessed the victory of Ramillies and the second staggering blow which the Allies dealt at the French monarchy. While the Allied army was marching steadily forward in pursuance of the Duke's plan to find a strong place whence to harry the enemy, they saw, on breasting an eminence, a great French and Bavarian army advancing as though in search of the Allied forces. The surprise was mutual. The tactics of the opposing leaders were, however, characteristically different, for while Marlborough at once assumed the offensive, the French and the Elector adopted the defensive, although the armies were practically equal in number.

In choosing the rising ground in the neighbourhood of Ramillies as the battlefield, the French Marshal took the fullest advantage of his opportunities, for this village stands higher than the surrounding country. On the rising ground which swept in a rough semi-circle to the village of Autre Eglise, a mile and a half distant, the French Marshal posted his forces. As the marshy hollows of the Little Geete made a frontal attack extremely difficult, and his two extremes were strongly held, he felt confident and calmly awaited the onslaught.

A detailed account of the four great battles of this decade does not come within the scope of this work, but it is permissible to point out that nothing more conclusively shows the versatility of Marlborough's genius than the methods employed at the battles of Blenheim, Ramillies, Oudenarde and Malplaquet.

---

## *Battle of Ramillies*

---

These differed in a marked degree, but the elements common to the four were the surprise attacks, quick initiative and absolute reliance on the British infantry. In the first two Marlborough was superior even to Napoleon.

Marshal Villeroy had stationed a strong body of infantry with cavalry supports at Autre Eglise on his extreme left, and these were continued to the little village of Offis in the centre, while infantry occupied the space from the latter hamlet to Ramillies. On the extreme right of the latter place, and on the firm ground between it and the small village of Tavier near the Mehaigne, 120 squadrons of French cavalry were stationed, including the famous Maison du Roy, or French Household Cavalry, with several battalions of infantry. Ramillies itself was surrounded by a ditch and defended by twenty battalions and twenty-four guns.

The Duke of Marlborough opened by a demonstration against the French left, with the object of preventing Villeroy sending reinforcements to his right wing, his vulnerable point and the one the Duke had decided to assail. He accordingly massed a strong force of British, Dutch and Germans opposite Autre Eglise and made ostentatious preparations for throwing pontoon bridges over the Little Geete. On seeing the British redcoats massing in such numbers Villeroy naturally concluded that the great assault would be at that point, and he resolved to strengthen it accordingly, drawing heavily on his massed infantry in Ramillies. Never was a great general so ridiculously hoodwinked. The massing of the Allied forces opposite this village was a ruse. Satisfied that Villeroy had taken the bait, Marlborough arranged the British



---

## *The Queen's against the French Left*

---

battalions in two lines and ordered them to fall back a short distance to a slight eminence. While he exposed one line with noisy parade on the crest of the little hill, the other descended until the French lost sight of it. Then he ordered them to turn to the left and march with all despatch to Ramillies. The greater part of the six regiments remained standing on the crest of the hill all day. They took little part in the battle, but nevertheless filled an important rôle by making the French generals believe that the whole of the British army was concentrated opposite their left wing. The Queen's was one of the battalions selected to play this colossal game of hide-and-seek, and among the first to lead the assault on Ramillies.

While the Dutch battalions were taking the village of Taviere, the newly arrived British, supplemented by four foreign regiments, advanced on Ramillies, but were assailed by the great body of French horse. In the mêlée the Duke of Marlborough was unhorsed, and would have been captured but for the readiness of his young aide-de-camp, who gave up his own charger. As the Allied infantry promptly formed square they were able to repel the enemy's cavalry with such vigour that the Maison du Roy were cut to pieces. The rest of the enemy's horse gave way to panic and sought to escape by riding over their own infantry in their mad flight. Before the broken foot could re-form the Allied infantry were on them and completed their demoralisation.

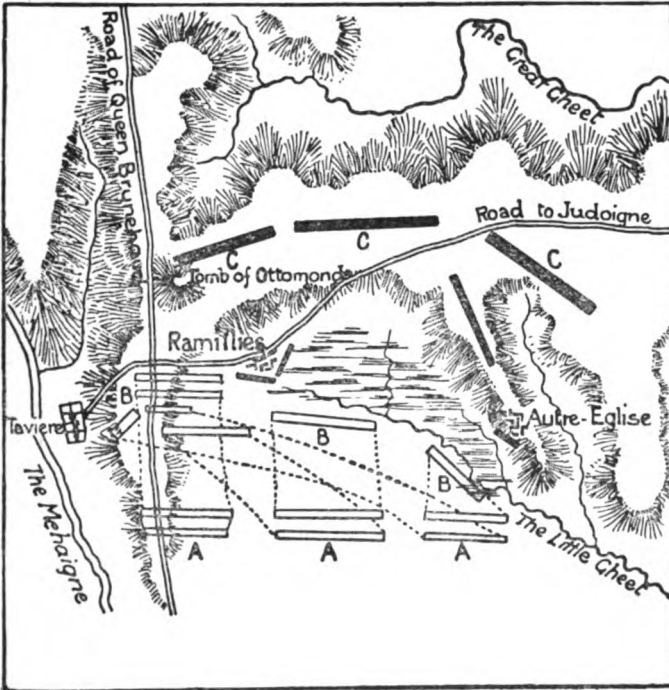
As the victorious British on the left were driving the enemy out of Ramillies, the Duke gave orders for their compatriots on the little hill opposite Autre Eglise to advance. Gleefully forcing their way through the intervening swamps, they dashed into

---

## *In the Final Assault*

---

that village and swept everything before them. Driven into the open from their extremities, the French foot fell an easy prey to the Allied cavalry. Many bat-



BATTLE OF RAMILLIES, MAY 23, 1706.

A, First position of the Allies; B, Second position of the Allies;  
C, First position of the French.

talions were ridden down and destroyed. Discarding muskets, accoutrements, coats, helmets, and, in fact, everything which they could cast aside, the rest of the French army gave way to a blind panic, blocking the road to Judoigne as well as scattering over the

---

## *At the Sieges of Menin and Aeth*

---

open country. The Allied cavalry pursued them as far as Louvain, a distance of twenty miles, cutting hundreds down, taking great numbers prisoners, and carrying fear and dismay into every French stronghold in Flanders.

The results of this striking victory electrified Europe. The French killed and wounded totalled 7000. Six thousand prisoners were captured—amongst them the Princes of Soubaise and Rohan—and several thousand men deserted. Fifty-two guns, eighty standards and the enemy's entire baggage-wagons and ammunition were also taken. The loss of the Allies was 1066 killed and 2567 wounded, or a total of 3633, a very high percentage indeed, and one bearing testimony to the severity of the struggle. Inasmuch as no records of regimental losses in Marlborough's great battles were kept, it is impossible to give the casualties suffered by the Queen's. Seeing, however, that they were in the thickest of the fight at Ramillies, they must have been considerable.

After the surrender of Antwerp and other important fortresses the Queen's was detached from the main British army to assist in the siege of Menin, then one of the strongest fortresses in the Low Countries. For the most part it was a matter of trench warfare, but when the final assault took place in August the regiment played a prominent part and did much to bring about the surrender of the citadel. Next followed the siege of Aeth, which was captured in September. After that the British army went into winter quarters, the Queen's being stationed at Ghent. The following year was one of comparative inactivity, and it was not until the spring of 1708 that the shadows of war again deepened.

---

## *Oudenarde: 1708*

---

After a brief return to England in April of 1708, in readiness for a projected invasion by the Pretender—a threat which was not fulfilled—the regiment was reviewed at Ghent in May by the Duke of Marlborough, who again expressed his satisfaction with its drill and discipline. On the 22nd it joined the rest of the army at Brussels.

Having secured possession of Ghent and Bruges, the French laid siege to the fortress of Oudenarde, which at that time was one of the most important strongholds on the Scheldt. It had been the intention of the Duke of Burgundy and Marshal Vendôme to come to the help of the besiegers with a powerful French army. But the Duke of Marlborough and Prince Eugène forestalled them by a series of forced marches, especially remarkable in those days when there was practically no organised transport, when roads were often quagmires, and guns and baggage had to be dragged out of morasses by the tired soldiers. Between two o'clock on a Monday morning and two o'clock on Wednesday morning the Allied army covered fifty miles. When they came within sight of Oudenarde they were so exhausted that no other general but Marlborough would have ventured to attack a strongly posted enemy without first giving the troops a rest. But Marlborough, like Napoleon, took risks. He knew there were divided counsels in the French camp and that the rival commanders were strongly opposed to each other. He also realised that, if time were given, the enemy's generals would probably patch up their differences and present such a united front with their huge army as completely to frustrate the Allied campaign. Hence the necessity for prompt action. That is why Oudenarde is one of

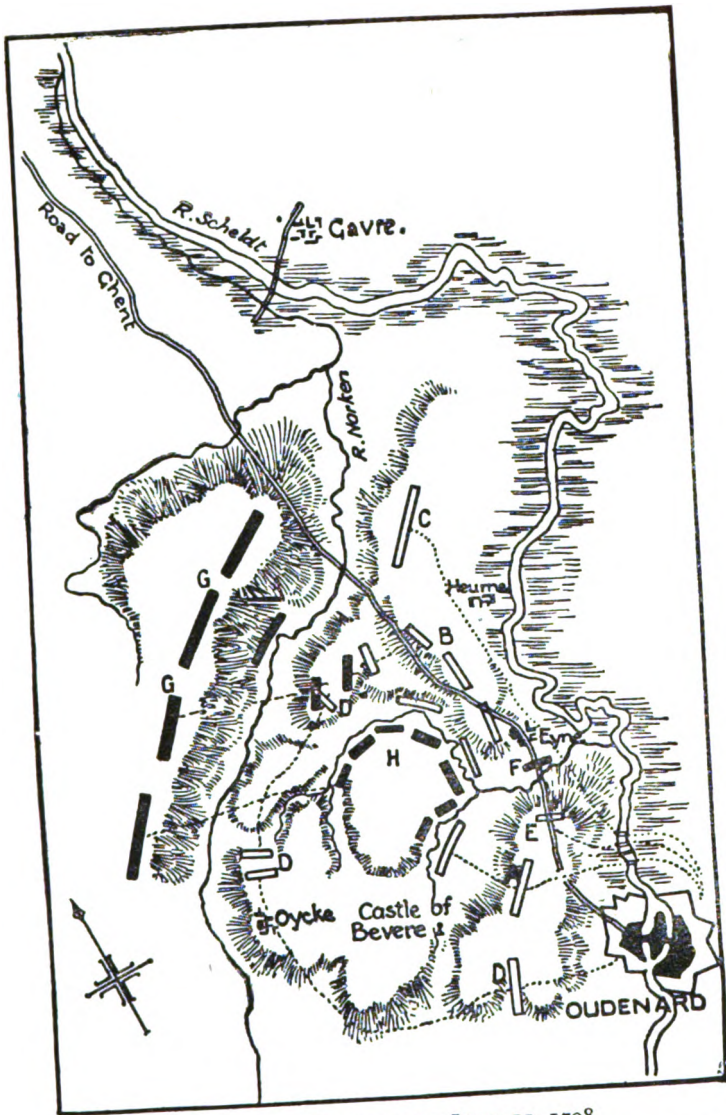
---

## *Battle of Oudenarde*

---

the most haphazard battles of the eighteenth century. It was a battle without a plan, where fateful decisions were taken on the spur of the moment, and where sheer audacity and courage alone offered a chance of success.

When the Allied army approached the Scheldt at two o'clock on the morning of July 11, 1708, their immediate proximity was quite unsuspected by the French posted on the rising ground on the other side of the river. Marlborough sent Lord Cadogan with eleven battalions and twenty-six guns to throw bridges over the Scheldt and to hold the village of Eyne on the further bank, while the remainder of the Allied army crossed. Meanwhile the French, all unconscious of the proximity of the Allies, were also passing over the river, but some miles lower. Presently, however, a French patrol reported the movement to Marshal Vendôme, who promptly ordered seven battalions to check the passage of the Allied advance force. When less than half Lord Cadogan's troops had crossed they were violently assailed, but held their ground until reinforcements arrived in the shape of the Queen's, the 18th, the 23rd and the 27th. Despite their fatigue and their lack of food for many hours, the red-coated British formed on the bank of the river, and then advanced at the double. They paused at intervals to pour in well-directed volleys, with those resounding shouts which have been heard so often on European battlefields, then charged with the bayonet, little heeding the muddy banks of the rivulets or the menacing clouds of cavalry on the rising ground. For a few moments there was a wild surging of men, flashes of glittering steel and the swaying of rich standards. Shrill cries, shouts, groans and crackling musketry



# BATTLE OF OUDENARDE, JULY 11, 1708.

A, Marlborough with the left; B, Eugène and Cadogan with the right; C, English cavalry holding the French in check; D, Overkirk and the Prince of Orange marching round Oycke to attack the French rear; E, First position of Cadogan; F, French troops destroyed by Cadogan; G, French troops in position before the battle; H, French right enveloped in the valley.

---

### *Three Regiments Surrender to the Queen's*

---

rose like a great malediction on the clear spring air. At last British weight and valour told. The Swiss and the picked battalions of France were borne back. Four of the seven regiments were annihilated, and the other three surrendered to the Queen's. It must have been a proud moment in the history of the regiment when its Colonel, General Richmond Webb, received the standards and the colonels' swords of three of the most celebrated French corps.

This exploit of the regiment in engaging and conquering the Swiss battalions was one of the most notable actions of the war, for the Swiss were at that time the most distinguished and the best disciplined corps in the service of France. They were generally regarded as invincible. To meet them on equal terms and after a long and heroic fight to compel them to surrender, was an event which resounded through the Allied army.

It was fortunate that divided counsels paralysed the arm of France for the greater part of this amazing day. Although the French were 120,000 strong, numerically equal, if not superior, to the Allies, no effort was made until too late to reinforce the seven regiments. It was not until five o'clock that Marshal Vendôme sent thirty battalions to Eyne. Immediately afterwards the Queen's was sent to the help of four Allied battalions which were being sorely pressed by the enemy. Taking shelter behind trees and hedges, and in ditches and declivities beside the small river, they poured a destructive fire into the French right, which greatly shook it. Being assailed, however, by overpowering numbers, they were compelled to fall back, fighting every inch of the way. Happily they were in turn reinforced, and again advanced, driving

---

## *Oudenarde*

---

the French back until the latter were nearly surrounded. But darkness began to fall, and the enemy, realising the uselessness of further resistance, ceased firing, and many of them surrendered. Had Vendôme's thirty battalions come early in the day they would probably have dealt with the Allies piecemeal, but when they did arrive the Allied army had crossed the river and the Duke of Argyll had reinforced Lord Cadogan with twenty battalions.

At the most critical moment, when the forces in the centre were evenly matched and neither side would give a yard, Prince Eugène arrived at the head of eighteen battalions, and the French were forced back and their centre pierced.

While the struggle was in progress the Duke of Marlborough placed himself at the head of a strong force of Hessians and Hanoverians and vigorously assailed the French right. Neither side gained any really marked advantage, and matters were beginning to look doubtful for the Allies, when the Duke, ever on the alert, observed that the enemy's extreme right was practically undefended. He thereupon despatched an urgent order to Marshal Overkirk, the veteran Dutch generalissimo, to take twenty Dutch and Danish battalions, until then in reserve, with several squadrons of cavalry, and to make a wide detour outside the village of Oycke—in other words, a couple of miles beyond the enemy's lines, and then to assail the French rear. Delighted with his task, the sick and feeble old man took command of the force himself, and handled it so skilfully as to assail the surprised enemy suddenly, cutting his way through and completely demoralising them. It was now ten o'clock and the day was waning. Fearing that the Allied



---

### *The Queen's Colonel Rewarded*

---

troops would fire on each other in the darkness, the Duke recalled them, and his buglers sounded the French retreat, a ruse which completed the demoralisation of the enemy. Confused, dispirited and not knowing which way to turn, they gave way to panic and blocked the roads to the rear of their army with guns, ammunition, baggage and vast masses of fugitives. Hundreds of men were cut down, great numbers were taken prisoners. The only portion to retire in anything like good order was the left wing, which, under the command of the Duke of Burgundy, had taken little or no part in the battle. Marlborough declared that "if he had had two hours more of daylight the French army would have been irretrievably routed, a great part of it killed or taken, and the war terminated on that day." The distinguished part played by the Queen's was fittingly acknowledged by a high command being given to its Colonel, Richmond Webb.

The enemy's casualties totalled 6000. Nine thousand were taken prisoners, and the great number of deserters brought the French losses up to 20,000. Added to this, 100 standards and a great amount of booty were taken. On the other hand, the totalled Allied loss was 3000.

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER V

#### THE CLOSE OF THE MARLBOROUGH CAMPAIGNS, 1708-1714

Siege of Lille—Saving the Great Convoy—Capture of Tournay  
—Battle of Malplaquet—Eclipse of the Great Duke—  
Regiment renamed the King's.

AFTER the victory of Oudenarde, Prince Eugène promptly laid siege to Lille, then one of the strongest fortresses in Europe. It was amply provisioned, armed with powerful artillery, and garrisoned by 15,000 seasoned French troops under the command of the veteran Marshal Boufflers. Every one realised that its capture would be one of the most serious blows ever dealt to the ambition of the French.

While the Allied troops encompassed the town the small British army acted as a covering force. As a French army 60,000 strong was advancing to relieve the town the English hurriedly threw up formidable earthworks from Nouvelles to Toulin, a distance of two miles, and made other preparations to give the enemy a warm reception. With what strange accuracy does history repeat itself in this blood-soaked corner of north-east France as well as in Flanders, and how aptly do the words of Marshal Vendôme, uttered over two hundred years ago, apply to the Great War, 1914-16.

---

## *Siege of Lille : 1708*

---

"We must not think of confining ourselves in the line of Ypres, but strengthen ourselves in a position where we can provide for the subsistence and security of the army, save Ghent and Bruges, deprive the Allies of the navigation of the Scheldt, and keep the Dutch in continual alarm."

The task of the Queen's Regiment during this eventful period was especially arduous. Constantly on duty, they had to convoy food and munitions to the besiegers, to forage over a wide stretch of country, prevent the smuggling of supplies into Lille, and on occasion take a share in surprise attacks. The grenadier company was so highly esteemed that it was selected to form part of the assaulting column in the final attack on the town. The Queen's was also the first battalion chosen as part of a force under its Colonel, now Major-General Richmond Webb, to protect a huge convoy of 700 carts, containing arms, ammunition, food and stores, coming from Ostend via Slype and Wynendale for the Allied army. Of the 15,000 men chosen for this purpose, 4000 foot and three squadrons of dragoons were under the command of General Webb and the rest under Lord Cadogan.

On the other side, Marshal Vendôme had received the fullest information as to the constitution and destination of this supply train, and despatched a force of 20,000 men from Bruges under De la Mothe to intercept it. By exercising the greatest diligence and marching night and day, however, General Webb reached the woods of Wynendale first, and was able to post his troops and place his guns on each side of the defile through which the road ran before the main body of the enemy was seen approaching. Anticipating no ambush, the French General had thrown out no forward reconnaissance party, whereas his rear-guard consisted of 300 men, for he imagined that Lord

---

## *The Wynendale Affair*

---

Cadogan's force which was coming up in his rear comprised the whole of the British expedition.

When the unsuspecting French had entirely filled the little valley, a shrill bugle call rang out from the depths of the forest, and the next moment a perfect tornado of shot swept through the enemy's dense ranks, mowing dozens down and throwing the amazed survivors into the greatest confusion. But the panic was only momentary. With the traditional heroism of their race the French pulled themselves together and advanced again, with the object of forcing their way through the valley. It was all in vain. From behind rocks and trees, from the midst of thickets and the long grass, the murderous volleys came. The narrow road was now covered with hundreds of dead and dying, and, to add to the confusion, numbers of riderless and frightened horses dashed to and fro, trampling on the dead and dying and breaking up every attempted formation. Within an hour 4000 Frenchmen had been placed *hors de combat*, while the prospect of forcing a way through to the open country seemed more remote than ever. Ultimately the French commander gave the order to retire, whereupon the convoy proceeded without hindrance and reached Prince Eugène on September 30. So crushing a defeat had naturally a most depressing effect on the garrison of Lille, but, on the other hand, it so stimulated the Allies that they stormed several of the outlying forts on October 3. Three weeks later the town surrendered. The citadel held out for six more weeks, but the victory was complete, and the dark cloud which had overshadowed the Continent for so many years was to some extent lifted. Major-General Richmond Webb received the unanimous thanks of Parliament for his striking exploit, an honour

---

## *Siege of Tournay: 1709*

---

very seldom conferred save on those in the highest command.

This great siege of Lille bears a closer resemblance to the methods of warfare pursued in north-east France and Belgium during 1914-16 than any other affair of arms during the Marlborough campaign. In sixty days the garrison of 16,700 was reduced to 4500. The Allied losses comprised 3622 killed, 8322 wounded, and 7000 deaths from sickness. The percentage of casualties was as high on both sides as any yet experienced in the Great War. After the surrender of Ghent and Bruges, which followed in quick succession, the Queen's, with other British regiments, went into winter quarters at the former city.

The spring of 1709 found the regiment strengthened by a draft of 150 recruits and ample supplies. The long rest and careful attention had brought it to such a pitch of perfection as to earn high praise from the Duke of Marlborough when he inspected it in June. Unfortunately one of Belgium's wet seasons had set in, and life in camp was becoming extremely dull, when the welcome order came for the battalion to proceed to Tournay to assist in the investment of that fortress. The story of this remarkable siege reads like a page from Homer. At that time Tournay was one of the richest and most populous cities in the Low Country. It held a commanding position on the frontiers of the French and Spanish Netherlands. Its citadel was strongly fortified, well garrisoned and amply provisioned, and it would have been madness for the Allies to leave such an enemy stronghold in their rear. Until it was captured it was impossible to undertake the investment of Mons.

An officer who took part in this siege sent a detailed

---

## *Trench Fighting*

---

account of the trench operations to the *Daily Courant* of 1709. With slight variations in the wording the narrative might have been penned in Flanders in the summer of 1915—

“ Now to our fighting underground : our miners and the enemy very often scent each other, where they have sharp combats till one side gives way. We have got into three or four of the enemies' great galleries, which is thirty or forty feet underground and lead to several of their great chambers ; and in these we fight in armour by lanthorn and candle, they disputing every inch of the galleries with us to hinder our finding their great mines. Yesterday night we found one which was placed just under one of our batteries in which were 1800 lbs. of powder, besides many bombs, and if we had not been so lucky to find it, in a very few hours our batteries with some hundreds of men had taken a flight into the air. So thus we must work some time, but we shall ferret them out at last. We have at least 80 seventy-four pounders and as many mortars playing continually on them. But their casements save them, so that their men that are off duty can take their rest, and they have men enough in the place. I can learn of no want that they are in, but flesh for their soldiers, having eaten all their dragoons' horses they took in, but bread they have enough.”

An impression prevails that many of these old campaigns were puny affairs compared with the Great War. In regard to numbers, equipment, weapons, arms of precision and high explosives, etc., this is no doubt true. It is, however, undoubted that the percentage of casualties in the campaigns of Marlborough was much higher than now. It was the same with siege operations. Bombs, grenades, stink-pots, mortars and other engines were in common use, and frequently did terrible execution. One of the mining operations during the investment of Tournay yields a good example. On August 26 a mine was exploded and 400 British soldiers were blown to pieces, but despite these terrible losses the siege was prose-

---

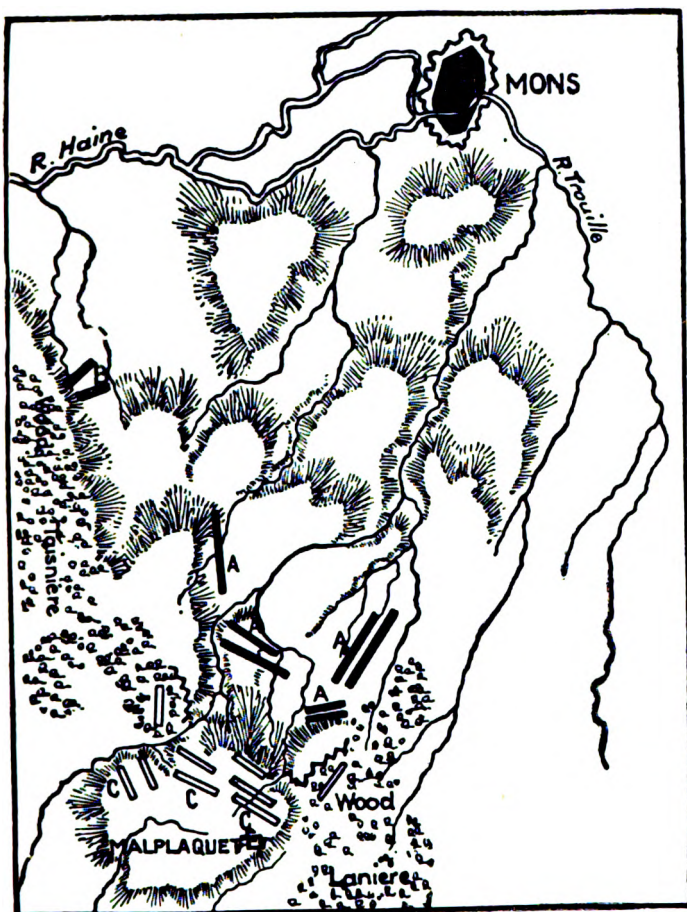
## *Battle of Malplaquet: 1709*

---

cuted with such energy that the citadel surrendered on August 31.

The sorely battered Allies had little time to rest. Marshal Villars with a French army 100,000 strong was some ten miles from Mons, at Malplaquet, and it was necessary to deal with him if the fruits of the campaign were not to be lost. At that time the country around the village named was enclosed in a great semicircular belt of forests, known as the woods of Taisniere, Sart and Lanriere. Of the two great openings in this forest, each about 3000 paces wide, one was known as Jemappes—afterwards remarkable as the scene of a great Republican victory in 1792—and the other as Aulnois, on the outer edge of which Malplaquet stands. It was the latter gap which Villars had selected as his battle-ground. Not only were his flanks protected by thick and difficult forests, but in his resolve to leave nothing to chance he had a triple line of entrenchments thrown up along his entire front. Several of Marlborough's more cautious generals were distinctly averse from storming an apparently impregnable position, but the Duke began the attack on the morning of September 11, and events justified the audacity of his genius. While the armies were practically equal in numbers, the odds were strongly in favour of the French. They had the advantage of position; they were fully prepared; they were defending their native soil; they were not exhausted like the Allies, and they had been greatly stimulated by the fact that the aged Marshal Boufflers, the idol of the French soldiery, had volunteered to serve under his junior, Marshal Villars.

The British and Dutch occupied the Allied centre. Thirty-six German battalions were stationed on the



BATTLE OF MALPLAQUET, SEPTEMBER 11, 1709

A, Marlborough and Eugène ; B, Withers ; C, Villars.



---

### *Charge by the Queen's*

---

right, their mission being to assail the enemy vigorously in front, while the English General Withers with a mixed force made a wide turning movement through the wood of Taisniere on the left. It was nine o'clock when the Germans opened the attack, but thrice they were driven back in confusion. At this point Marlborough sent three British regiments to their help, viz. the Queen's (later known as the 8th, and still later the King's Liverpool), the 21st and the 23rd, while he advanced with a strong body of cavalry in support. Acting as the apex of the great human wedge, the three British battalions boldly advanced and with ringing cheers charged over the triple line of trenches. They used their bayonets with such effect as to drive the enemy from the open into the woods, where the struggle resolved itself into a series of hand-to-hand fights. Amid the thick trees and dense undergrowth these sturdy sons of France and Britain came to close grips. Unable to use musket and bayonet, they unscrewed the latter and, using them as daggers, fought as men possessed. When the bayonets broke they seized each other with their hard, strong hands in a fierce endeavour to strangle their enemy. At the end of an hour the combatants were utterly exhausted. Lieut.-Colonel Ramsay, in command of the Queen's, was killed, and Major-General Richmond Webb as well as several other regimental officers were seriously wounded. It says much for the high esteem in which General Webb was held that when Prince Eugène heard of the incident he sent his own surgeon to attend him.

At this psychological moment General Withers with his flanking battalions forced their way through the forest and fell on the French right. He drove



LIEUT.-GENERAL JOHN RICHMOND WEBB, COLONEL OF  
THE REGIMENT, 1695-1715.



them back step by step until they were forced into some marshy ground, where, falling into confusion, they were no longer able to stem the onrushing wave of Allied soldiers. During this *mêlée* Marshal Villars was dangerously wounded. Although he essayed to give orders seated in a chair, he soon fainted and was taken off the field.

This was not the only tragedy on this heroic day. The Prince of Orange, tired of the inactive part he was playing, launched his 20,000 Dutchmen on the French right, where Marshal Boufflers commanded. Never did an attacking party receive so hot a reception. As they hurled themselves against the formidable entrenchments the Dutch were mown down in hundreds. When at last the survivors fell back they left 10,000 of their number dead or dying on the field.

Alarmed at the critical state of his left wing, Marshal Villars had greatly weakened his centre before he was stricken down, but even these reinforcements were insufficient, and he sent to Boufflers for several battalions. The aged Marshal could not furnish them, for he had his hands full in dealing with the Dutch onslaught. Although he had repulsed the latter's attack he had no time to despatch help to the stricken French left, for while Prince Eugène assailed the enemy's right, Marlborough hurled his British legions, along with the survivors of the Dutch troops, at the weakened centre and carried it after a brief but sanguinary struggle.

It was fortunate that the broken French army had such a consummate general as Boufflers in command at this critical moment. As calmly as though on parade, and without showing the slightest hesitation

---

## *The Fall of Marlborough*

---

or despair, he gave the order to retreat. So admirably was the movement executed that only 500 uninjured French prisoners and very few guns were left in the hands of the victors.

This was the last of Marlborough's great battles, and it was also the most costly, for the Allies lost 20,319 men killed and wounded, whereas the French casualties did not exceed 12,000. The Allies were too exhausted to pursue, and the enemy made good his retreat.

During the succeeding two years the Queen's Regiment played a fitting part in the trench warfare and in the capture of Mons, Douay, Aire, Bethune and Bouchain. They also assisted to force the lines generally known as those of La Bassée, which Marshal Villars had boasted were impregnable. And when the main British army returned to England, it was chosen to garrison Ghent with the 18th Regiment.

It is a shrewd commentary on the vanity of human affairs that, soon after this, Marlborough, the most consummate general of his age, the man whose name was feared or revered from the Danube to the Tagus, fell a victim to the poison of political intrigue. Hounded from place and power, his every action distorted, represented even as a traitor to his country, he had little opportunity to enjoy the rewards he so richly merited. But he was ever the idol of his soldiers, and the Queen's had the joy of welcoming him when he visited Ghent with the Duchess in June 1714. On August 1 Queen Anne died, and with the accession of George I the name of the regiment was altered to "The King's."

The great Duke was not the only sufferer from the envenomed shafts of party slander. His friends and

---

### *Richmond Webb Removed*

---

supporters were swept away by the flood. Lieut.-General Richmond Webb, the valiant soldier and the adored Colonel of the regiment, was called upon to dispose of his colonelcy in 1715, though this can hardly have been due to his politics, for he was a Tory and Marlborough a Whig. Henry Morrison was selected for the vacancy.

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER VI

#### SEVEN BATTLES, 1714-1763

Dunblane — Dettingen — Fontenoy — Falkirk — Culloden —  
Roucoux — Lauffeld.

THERE was little glory or profit in the Jacobite rebellion. Like most civil wars, it left a long heritage of hatred and bitter memories.

In 1714 the King's Regiment returned home, and after being quartered at Berwick proceeded to Ireland. A few months later it embarked for Glasgow, and on November 11 joined the Duke of Argyll's army at Stirling. On the 13th it took part in the disastrous battle of Dunblane, and suffered heavier losses than in any of Marlborough's battles. The English troops were engaged in complicated manœuvres, in accordance with the custom of the time, when a great force of Highlanders who had been hidden behind some neighbouring hillocks burst suddenly upon the surprised British. Taken at a disadvantage, and unable to use their muskets and bayonets at such close quarters, the heavily accoutred English infantry fell an easy prey to the lightly armed clansmen, who used their dirks and claymores with terrible effect. The affair was rapidly degenerating into a massacre, when an opportune charge of dragoons checked the rebel troops and enabled the English to fall back and re-form.

---

## *Battle of Dunblane : 1714*

---

As the King's were somewhat in advance of the British force they suffered very severely, their casualties totalling 133 officers and men, or more than a quarter of the entire regiment. Lieut.-Colonel Hammer, two captains, four lieutenants, three ensigns and ninety-seven of the rank and file were killed, the Earl of Forfar and thirteen men were wounded, and two ensigns and ten men taken prisoners. But these sacrifices did not go unrewarded, for when George I was firmly seated on the throne he confirmed the corps in its title "The King's Regiment of Foot." The facings were changed from yellow to royal blue, and the regiment was presented with "The White Horse of Hanover" as its badge. This was the first occasion on which the historic token was conferred on a British unit.

The succeeding twenty-six years were spent in the routine of military life. In 1742 the torch of war once more flamed through Europe, and the King's embarked for Ostend. It was not actively engaged in the campaign until the following year, when it took part in the remarkable battle of Dettingen.

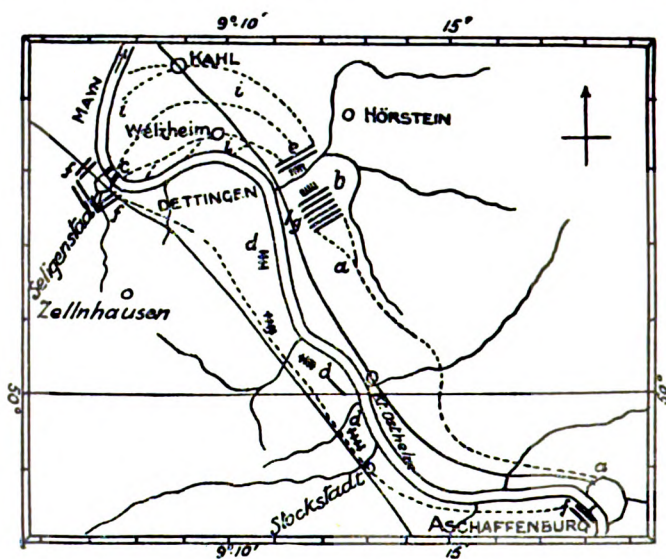
If ever comedy and tragedy were cheek by jowl on the battlefield they were at Dettingen. The conflict was distinguished by several very unusual features: it was the last occasion on which a British monarch appeared on the battlefield; it was prolific of blunders; it outraged nearly every canon of military law; it saw the creation of more bannerets on the battlefield than at any time since the Middle Ages, and it furnished the curious spectacle of King George's horse running away with him, to his visible disgust, from the enemy, while that of his son, the Duke of Cumberland, also taking fright, boldly charged the French lines. On



## *Battle of Dettingen : 1743*

the other hand, it again demonstrated the superiority of the British in volley firing and bayonet charges.

The Allied army comprised twenty battalions of British infantry, several squadrons of horse, and a mixed force of Hessians and Austrians, totalling 52,000 men. Having marched into Bavaria in order to help



BATTLE OF DETTINGEN, JULY 27, 1743.

*aa, March of the Allied Army ; b, Position of the Allied Army before the Battle ; c, Two Bridges at Seligenstadt ; d d d d, French Batteries ; e, French Forces under Grammont ; ff, Disposition of Noailles' Army ; g, Gardes Françaises attacking in flank ; iii, Retreat of the French.*

the Austrians, this army found itself in June 1743 on the eastern bank of the Maine near Mayence. Although a French army 70,000 strong was advancing, the Allies remained inactive for over a fortnight, until want of

---

### *The King's makes a Stand*

---

food for man and beast compelled them to retreat towards the town of Hanau, some eight miles down the river. At four o'clock on the morning of June 27 they began their march into the trap which the French Marshal boasted he had set for them. According to all the rules of the grim game of war they were doomed. On the left flowed a broad, deep river; on the right thick, unbroken woods hugged the road; in front Count Grammont lay in waiting with a well-entrenched force of 28,000 men; and behind was not only the starvation from which they were fleeing, but an unknown body of the enemy's cavalry. The French artillery as well as a strong force of infantry was posted on the further bank of the river. As the Allied troops filed along the narrow road they formed an admirable target for the French gunners, and they suffered accordingly. Shot and shell tore lanes through the packed infantry, and by smashing up the baggage, which had been foolishly placed in the centre of the column, threw the troops into confusion and impeded the march. Valuable time, moreover, was lost in bringing up the Allied artillery, and the day was far advanced before anything like an effective reply could be made to the enemy's guns.

When the harassed Allies came to a piece of open ground, big enough to allow only half the army to debouch, the angry and perspiring King resolved to make a stand and force the issue. The redcoats were formed into two lines. The Thirty-Third Foot was stationed on the extreme left. Then came the Twenty-First, the Twenty-Third Fusiliers, the Twelfth, Eleventh, Eighth (now the King's Liverpool) and the Thirteenth, as well as an Austrian brigade. The extreme right was made up of two regiments of

---

## *Dettingen*

---

Life Guards and two of Dragoons. The second line consisted of five British battalions, four Dragoon regiments and the Scots Greys.

We get an intimate view of the battle and the conditions under which soldiers campaigned in these days from a letter written by Trooper William Robinson of the Life Guards. It appeared in the *Daily Post*, July 1, 1743. Like the trench epistles written during the Great War, it gives us a valuable peep behind the scenes.

"The spot on which we drew up had the river on the left and a large wood on the right. The French intended to have drawn the main body of their Foot into that wood, and to have flanked our Horse, which, if we had not prevented, would have entirely ruined us. But our cannon being placed secretly on the edge of the wood, on a line with our Foot, as soon as the French were advanced within musket-shot and the first charge was given, it played sweetly upon them and startled them not a little, for whole lines were swept away by it . . . the French imagining their cannon did great execution, as it played incessantly upon us, before they drew up in order and the first charge was given, which indeed was a glorious one, upwards of 80,000 muskets having been fired in four minutes' time besides cannon. . . . What vexes me more than anything else, I have got £14 in my pocket and can't get it remitted to England, so that if I am knocked on the head all is lost. For these seven weeks past I have not been in a bed, and at present we are so harassed that I think myself lucky if I can get four hours' rest upon the bare ground without either tent or straw, and to make matters worse we are hard put to it for provisions and starve with money in our pockets."

Had Count Grammont obeyed orders and waited for the retreating army nothing could have saved the Allies. But he was young, ambitious and impatient. Leaving his naturally strong position astride the highway, he advanced to meet the Allies and found them, no doubt to his surprise, drawn up in battle array. Glad of the opportunity of meeting

---

## *Trooper Brown*

---

their foes in the open, the British began platoon and volley firing to such effect that whole lines of the French infantry fell. When Lord Stair rode up and ordered the cheering islanders to fire all together, they so broke up the enemy as to compel them to seek the shelter of the advancing cavalry. But the latter fared even worse than their comrades, for they, too, broke and fled in a panic, closely pursued by the British Horse.

It was during the charge of the Horse that the King's steed bolted with him. To do his Majesty justice, it should be said that he was undoubtedly a brave man. He had won his spurs at Oudenarde, and exposed himself fearlessly on this eventful day. It was in this famous battle that Trooper Thomas Brown of the Third Dragoons performed those amazing exploits which not only made him for over half a century the hero of the British people, but also won the knighthood which the delighted King conferred upon him on the battlefield. His regiment had suffered severely; all the officers save two had been killed and wounded. Two of the standards had been cut to pieces, and the third was dropped by a severely wounded cornet. Trooper Brown had dismounted to recover it, when a French cavalryman slashed off two of the fingers of his left hand. Thereupon the Englishman's horse bolted and carried his rider far to the enemy's rear. Turning at last, he saw a French sergeant triumphantly returning with the regimental standard he had endeavoured to save. Without a moment's hesitation he charged the Frenchman, killed him, recovered the prize, and, placing it between his thigh and the saddle, hurled himself furiously on the enemy's line, cutting down or unhorsing man after man until he won his

---

## *Battle of Fontenoy, 1745*

---

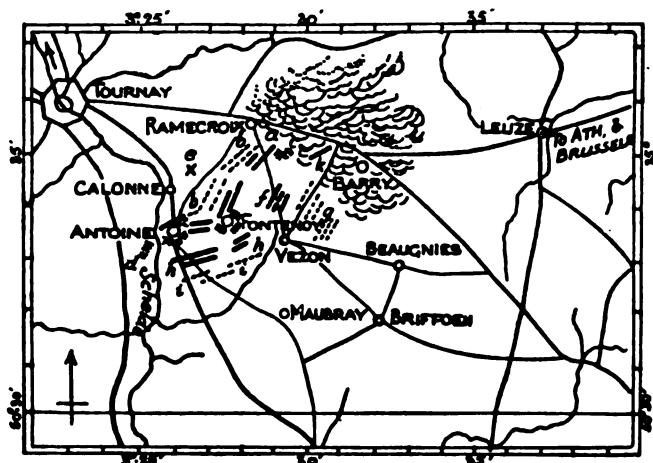
way through to the British lines with the standard, and also with three bullet holes through his hat and seven wounds on his face and body. As there was no decoration like the Victoria Cross in those days the King knighted him, but beyond the fact that his print adorned innumerable cottages for a couple of generations there is an end of the story. Had he lived nowadays an admiring public would have found the wherewithal to kill him with banquets and civic laudations. Compelled at last to retire, the greater part of the French army crossed the river, where 500 of their number were drowned. Altogether the enemy lost 5000 men and the Allies 2500, of whom 826 were British. The casualties of the King's totalled thirty-nine.

At the battle of Fontenoy, two years later, the King's also played a notable part. The fortress of Tournay was undergoing one of its occasional sieges by a huge French army under Louis XV. When the Allies advanced to its relief on one bright May morning of 1745, they found the enemy strongly posted on the top of a wide stretch of rising ground and calmly awaiting them. Here again the King's occupied a place of honour in the front line. The Grenadier Guards were stationed on the extreme right, followed successively by the Coldstream Guards, the Scots Guards, the First, Twenty-First and Thirty-First, the Eighth (King's Liverpool), the Twenty-Fifth and the Thirty-Third. The second line also consisted of British battalions and the third of Hessians.

A roll of the side-drums gave the signal for the Allied advance. As the serried ranks of redcoats swept over the open ground they presented an awe-some appearance. With shouldered muskets, glitter-

## *The King's in the Front Line*

ing bayonets, waving standards and accurate dressing, they moved as calmly as though on parade, grim, resolute, silent—save for the rattle of the drums, a sharp command or an occasional word from the officers who marched in front, sword in hand. Even when the round-shot and shell tore through the ranks, leaving bloody lanes which were quickly filled, they



BATTLE OF FONTENOY, MAY 11, 1745.

a a, French Infantry; b b, French Horse; c, Redoubt d'Eu; d, Subsidiary French Battery which takes the Dutch in flank; e, Gallows-Hill, where King Louis and the Dauphin were; f, English Foot; g, English Horse; h h, Dutch and Austrian Foot; i i, Dutch and Austrian Horse; k, Ingoldsby starting (in vain) to attack Redoubt d'Eu.

were still calm, confident and silent. On, on, on, yard by yard, like a myriad-legged monster the advancing mass crept on until it breasted the first hillock and the men could look down into the broad, deep trenches crowded with wondering, fierce-eyed Frenchmen.

At last, when face to face with the enemy the order to "present" was rolled from the drums and followed

---

## *Battle of Fontenoy, 1745*

---

by that of "fire," such a triple-lined volley rang out as swept a tornado of death through the trenches and made the covering French troops fall back in horror and dismay. Marshal Saxe, the greatest military leader of his time, had, however, anticipated all this, and reinforcements were at hand. But they, too, were remorselessly swept aside. The French monarch was watching the battle from the safe shelter of a distant mill, and deemed all was lost. At this point Marshal Saxe, though dying from dropsy and suffering intensely, was hoisted into the saddle, and, placing himself at the head of the famous *Maison du Roy* and supported by the general body of cavalry, furiously charged the British battalions as they penetrated into the French camp.

Had the Dutch, instead of giving way to panic, energetically supported the British and Hessians, the Allies would have carried the day. But, vastly outnumbered, assailed from three sides, and with six battalions of the Irish brigade in the French service in front of them, they had to choose between destruction and retreat. Closing their ranks and forming themselves into hollow squares, they slowly retired, pausing at frequent intervals to pour telling volleys into the seething masses around them.

At this critical juncture the English cavalry saved the situation. Although sadly depleted in numbers, they charged the enemy with such telling effect as to give the harassed Foot time to regain their position.

The French had been too severely punished to follow the wounded lion. Their casualties totalled 10,000, while the losses of the Allies did not exceed 6000, though 4000 of those were British, the King's having 137 men placed *hors de combat*. Lieut.-Colonel

---

## *"Wolfe's Boys" at Culloden, 1746*

---

Keithley, Major Grey, Captains Dallow, Loftus and Atkins, and Lieutenants Cook and Thompson were amongst the wounded.

Shortly afterwards the battalion returned home and was sent to Scotland, where it took part in the battle of Falkirk in January 1746. Fought in the midst of a blinding snowstorm, which prevented the British troops firing with their usual precision, the result was a draw, for both armies retired during the night following the encounter.

At the battle of Culloden three months later the regiment was stationed on the left of the second line. When the furious Highlanders endeavoured to overwhelm the Fourth Foot the King's advanced to the latter's help, and played a very conspicuous part in beating back the valiant clansmen. According to the "Military Extracts" of the time General Edward Wolfe's regiment (the King's) behaved with great gallantry. H.R.H. the Duke of Cumberland thanked both officers and men at the head of the regiment, saying, "Wolfe's boys, I thank you; you have done the business."

A few months later the King's embarked for Holland. After taking part in the battle of Roucoux, it accompanied the Allies in their retreat. Its most notable achievement during this unsatisfactory campaign was at the battle of Lauffeld, or Val, on July 1, 1747. Although Mr. Fortescue in his *History of the British Army* omits the Eighth, or King's, from the lists of regiments present on that occasion, the Duke of Cumberland specifically mentions it in his dispatch published in the *Morning Advertiser* of July 6, 1747. He says—

"Overpowered by this new supply of fresh troops the regiments in Val were about to give way, but being sustained



---

## *Battle of Lauffeld, 1747*

---

by the regiments of Wolfe [now the King's Liverpool], Charles Howard, Conway and Hauss returned to the charge and recovered the post. The brigades of Navarre, La Margue, Irish, Monaco, Royal des Vaisseaux and several others were entirely ruined. The enemy kept still pouring on fresh lines of foot so that the village was lost on both sides several times."

Although the Allies retired they did so in good order, carrying with them nine French colours and five standards won from the enemy's most famous regiments. The Allies lost 6000 men, the casualties of the five British horse regiments and the fifteen battalions of foot being 2000. The King's lost 128 men. The following winter the regiment returned to England.

During the ensuing eighteen years few noteworthy incidents in the history of the regiment stand out. During the two years it spent at Gibraltar its title was altered to the "Eighth or King's Regiment." It was also decreed that the regimental colour should be of blue silk, the distinctions being—

"In the centre of the colour the White Horse on a red ground within the garter, and crown over it; in the three corners of the second colour, the King's cypher and crown; on the Grenadier caps the White Horse as on the colours; the White Horse and motto, *Nec aspera terrent*, on the flap."

The same device of the White Horse within the garter appeared on the drums and belts of arms, rank of the regiment underneath. Save for the addition of the sphinx these badges, etc. have remained unaltered.

In 1756 a second battalion was formed, but as the latter was constituted a distinct regiment a couple of years later under the title of the Sixty-Third, its history does not come within the scope of this work.

The three years 1760–63 were spent in Germany,

---

## *A Second Battalion, 1756*

---

but although the regiment took part in a number of minor engagements, in which the grenadier company distinguished itself, no battle of first-class importance took place. On its return home it was quartered in Scotland, but removed later to London, where it was reviewed by George III in Hyde Park. During this period it had the misfortune to lose its Colonel, Lieut.-General Stanwix, who embarked on the *Eagle* at Dublin with his wife and family, but the ship was lost at sea and every one on board drowned.

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER VII

CANADA, 1768-1785; EGYPT, 1801

Campaigning in the New World—Captain Foster's Exploits—  
Landing at Aboukir—Battle for Alexandria.

HAVING won honour and glory on the ensanguined battlefields of Europe, the famous regiment was now to gather fresh laurels in the pathless forests of the New World. Embarking for Canada in May 1768, it spent five years at Quebec, Montreal and St. John's. One portion was sent to Niagara and the other to Detroit, where they were split up into detachments in order to occupy the small posts, and scattered along the shores of the great lakes and in the pathless wilderness. These blockhouses were often hundreds of miles apart, some being garrisoned by a platoon and the larger ones by a company. It must have been a strange change to these pipe-clayed, stiff, well-drilled soldiers fresh from the bustle and noise of large towns to be plunged into the profound silence and solemn dignity of these primeval forests, where time seemed to be at a standstill and the rivalries and wars of humanity resembled the activity of a disturbed ant-hill.

In the meantime great events were ripening on the knees of the gods. The revolt of the North American colonists and the folly of Bunker's Hill followed

---

## *Captain Foster's Exploits*

---

in quick succession. The irritating imbecility of the Home Government made a bad matter worse, until the two great branches of the Anglo-Saxon family were committed to a suicidal war altogether at variance with the instincts of the people of Great Britain.

During 1774-5 the King's remained in peaceful seclusion in Upper Canada, but in the spring of 1776 part of the regiment proceeded south to help in the relief of Quebec, and to take a hand in driving the insurgents out of Canada. In these days of good roads and quick communication it is difficult to picture that long march over hundreds of miles of roadless, thickly wooded, uninhabited country, intersected by rivers, lakes, ravines and hills. As there were no supply trains or Army Service Corps, food had to be won from the thick forests, and the primitive art of foraging was brought to perfection. Nothing, indeed, could have been more incongruous than this throwing of the stilted martinet, with his high leather stock and powdered peruke, his spotless white gaiters and long thick red coat, into surroundings where sparse clothing was of the greatest advantage during part of the year.

The adventures of the scattered detachments of the King's during these few eventful years would fill a bulky volume. The exploits of Captain G. Foster are a good example. He was stationed with sixty men at a blockhouse at Oswegatchie on the St. Lawrence. A few miles down the river 400 Americans were located at Fort Cedars, their duty being to watch the stream and wherever possible to harry the British. But Foster was not the man to wait idly until the enemy hunted him down. He knew that the best defence was a quick offensive. After

---

## *Capture of Fort Cedars*

---

leaving an officer and nineteen men to guard the blockhouse, two officers and thirty-eight men along with ten Canadian volunteers and 128 Indians were available for the expedition he had planned.

Plunging into the forest Captain Foster led his little party to the Indian village of St. Regis. After a long palaver the chiefs intimated that though they would not themselves take part in the expedition they had no objection to their young warriors joining it. Soon afterwards several Canadians came in; but even with these reinforcements the party did not total 400. Cautiously moving through the forest the small force presently came to a halt within a mile of the unsuspecting Americans.

Dividing his men into three parties Foster ordered half a dozen regulars, the Canadians and a hundred Indians to make their way secretly to the immediate neighbourhood of the fort and there await his signal. He next sent a hundred Indians to the bank of the river to cut off any attempted retreat on the part of the garrison. They were just in time to intercept a party of the enemy returning to the fort with provisions. Although the latter managed to escape with the loss of one man they left their food behind, to the no small satisfaction of the natives.

Advancing boldly to the fort with his remaining troops Foster summoned the Americans to surrender. Major Butterfield, who was in command, endeavoured to secure a few hours' delay, but this was promptly refused and the attack was so rigorously prosecuted that the garrison soon surrendered and 390 officers and men were made prisoners.

On the following day a report was brought in that a detachment of Americans was advancing from the

---

## *The Fight at Vaudreuil*

---

north-east, apparently ignorant of the fact that Fort Cedars had changed hands. Thereupon Captain Foster sent a strong party to take possession of the rough road through the forest, and as a result the unsuspecting enemy walked blindly into the ambush. In the consequent fight one Indian was killed and three wounded. This so enraged their fellow-warriors that they halted just outside the blockhouse and declared their intention to torture and kill the prisoners. Although Captain Foster and his party ran the greatest risk of sharing the threatened fate of the Americans, he so stoutly opposed the Indians' proposal that they were obliged to give way.

Leaving his prisoners in charge of ten soldiers and several Canadians, the Captain next advanced to the little blockhouse of Vaudreuil, six miles from the Cedars. After taking possession of it, he was about to resume his march when his scouts brought word that 600 Americans under Colonel Arnold were encamped at Fort La Chine, and that they were expecting strong reinforcements. He accordingly remained at Vaudreuil. Soon afterwards he learned that an American force 700 strong had embarked on boats, and were coming up the river with the obvious intention of crushing the little British contingent.

Although Captain Foster had only forty whites and 350 Indians, he was not the man to shirk a fight even when the odds were overwhelmingly against him. Selecting three tongues of land, a few hundred yards apart, each of which jutted well into the river, he stationed a strong body of Indians on the left point. Thirty soldiers of the King's occupied the centre tongue, while the Canadians supported by a small party of Indians guarded the third.

---

## *Guerilla Warfare in Canada*

---

As the flotilla swept up the stream its commander essayed to land on the nearest projection, but the Indians gave him such a warm reception as caused him to sheer off and make for the second neck of land. Here he fared even worse, for the platoon firing of the King's told severely on his force. He was treated in a similarly drastic fashion at his third attempt, lost nearly a hundred men killed and wounded, and had several boats damaged. He then concluded that the defenders were in considerable numbers, and acting on the principle that discretion is the better part of valour, he ordered his party to retire with all haste to St. Ann's.

It must have been a novel sight to these hardy soldiers, bred in the peaceful villages of Britain, as they calmly smoked by their camp fire within a stone's throw of the great river on the night of their success, to see the savages celebrating the victory with weird war-dances and waving the scalps torn from the heads of the American dead. The river runs as majestically as ever, and Nature showers her bounties with the same lavish hand, but the fierce Indians, the red-coats, the impenetrable forest and the sounds of war have gone, and peace and prosperity enfold the continent in their embrace.

As Captain Foster's prisoners far outnumbered his own force, and he had difficulty in feeding and protecting them, he released them on condition that they would not serve against the British until formally exchanged. On the false excuse, however, that they had been ill-treated the American Congress released them from their parole and ordered them to take up arms again.

Another detachment of the King's Liverpool one

---

## *The Siege of Fort Stanwix*

---

hundred strong, under the command of Colonel Barry St. Leger of the Thirty-Fourth, supported by a body of Indians, laid siege to Fort Stanwix on the Mohawk river. A fortnight later a party of Americans, on their way to relieve the garrison, straggled through the forests and fell into an ambush which St. Leger had set for them. Panic-stricken by the telling volleys, which killed and wounded a considerable number of them, the survivors were seeking to escape, when a host of yelling savages dashed from the woods and completed their defeat. Half the detachment was killed and wounded, and only a third of the force succeeded in regaining their headquarters. While these stirring incidents were being enacted, the garrison of the fort made a sortie and plundered and burned the Indian Camp.

Unfortunately the discontent of the Indians, coupled with the approach of a strong American force, compelled the British to raise the siege. Retiring to Montreal they afterwards proceeded to Ticonderoga, but while on the march General Burgoyne capitulated.

The King's remained in Canada until 1785, when it returned to England. In 1794 it was despatched to Flanders, forming part of the unsuccessful expedition under the Duke of York. It helped to defend Nimeguen when that fortress was besieged, losing an officer and nine men. During the severe winter of 1795 it suffered severely in its retreat through the heavy snows and over the frozen rivers of the Low Countries.

When the flank companies were sent to the West Indies to take part in the capture of St. Lucia (1796), the rest of the regiment proceeded to Minorca, where it remained twelve months. It then went to Egypt

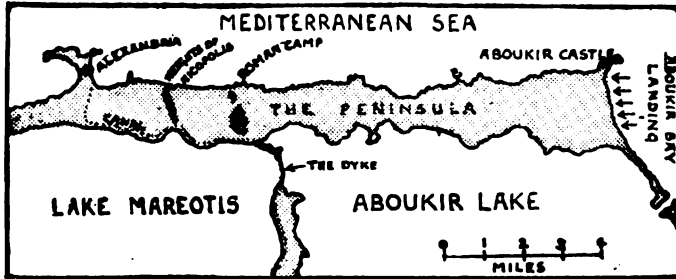


---

## *Egyptian Campaign, 1801*

---

as part of Sir Ralph Abercromby's expedition, its total muster being 490 officers and men. Although heavily bombarded by the entrenched enemy, the expeditionary force safely effected a landing on the sandy peninsula near the castle of Aboukir in the early morning of March 8, 1801. The British troops hastily took up their positions, fixed bayonets, and swept over the sand-hills behind which the French were posted and speedily routed them, capturing a number of prisoners and several guns. Although



EGYPTIAN CAMPAIGN, 1801.

the affair only lasted a short time, it cost the British 788 and the French 300 men in casualties.

After a brief rest the expeditionary force proceeded along the arid waste towards Alexandria, and had to fight every foot of the way. As the white walls and glittering domes of the ancient city showed up invitingly, it was seen that a French army 20,000 strong was strongly posted to the east of the city, its right resting on the canal. The King's formed part of the Second Brigade commanded by General Craddock. His orders were to turn the enemy's right, which was strongly held, and the regiment came in for a good deal of fighting.

---

## *The Battle of March 13*

---

The little British army of 12,000 men had been sadly reduced by sickness and hardship; indeed, their sufferings tried the strongest constitutions. With a tropical sun blazing in a sky of brass; the scorching sand blistering their feet and radiating the heat until it burnt the flesh; lacking food and water, which were supplied only intermittently and with difficulty from the fleet; tormented by flies and the vermin plagues of Egypt; burdened by thick clothing, heavy packs and weapons, and ever harassed by a vigilant enemy, the experience must have been strange to those veterans of the King's who had survived from the campaigns on the snowy plains of Canada.

During the night of March 13, while the men were resting, exhausted with their labour of hauling up the guns, the alarm was sounded and the troops took up their positions. The King's, along with the Eighteenth, Nineteenth and Thirtieth, took their stand near the canal. Although the firing began here it was a feint, for the real attack was delivered on the extreme right. Strong supports were hurried to this wing, while the Fleet (anticipating the bombardment of the Belgian coast 114 years later) poured a destructive fire on the French position.

Although General Menou hurled all his available cavalry at the redcoats, British steadiness and resolution won. The French Horse and Foot were broken, and hurled back; the whole force retreated.

The feint, however, was a serious affair, for the King's lost eighty-two officers and men out of the 400 who took part in the battle. Even at that time the question of munitions was a burning question, for Major-General (afterwards Sir John) Moore, who commanded the reserve, says in his diary—

---

*Egypt, 1801*

---

“ We were for an hour without a cartridge; the enemy during this time were pounding us with shot and shell and distant musketry. Our artillery could not return a shot, and, had their infantry advanced again, we must have repelled them with the bayonet. Our fellows would have done it; I never saw men more determined to do their duty.”

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER VIII

#### AMERICAN CAMPAIGN, 1812-1814

Capture of Martinique—The American War—Capture of Ogdensburg—Defence of Fort George—A Surprise Attack—Defence of Sackett's Harbour—Amazing Exploits at Niagara—A Short-lived Second Battalion.

ALTHOUGH the fates decreed that the King's should take no part in the conquest of India, the Peninsular War or the crowning victory of Waterloo, the regiment rendered yeoman service to the cause of empire in the Western Hemisphere by preventing the absorption of Canada into the United States, and by helping to crush the power of France in the West Indies, sailing thence from Halifax in November 1808.

When the regiment went from the Barbadoes to Martinique in 1809 it numbered 991 of all ranks. It took a prominent part in storming the heights of Surirey, and next came the siege of Fort Bourbon, where it took three French eagles. These services were honoured by the addition of the word "Martinique" to its colours.

The regiment had been quartered in Quebec a couple of years when the United States declared war against Great Britain in 1812, and in the autumn of that year it proceeded to Prescott, in Upper Canada. Its mission was to check the raiding parties of Americans who took advantage of the frozen rivers and

---

## *The American Campaign, 1812-13*

---

lakes to harry the Colonial settlements, and to intercept the convoys passing from Montreal to the more distant posts in the great wilderness.

Soon after their arrival a small force, consisting of 120 men of the King's under Captain Eustace and 360 belonging to the Glengarry Light Infantry Invincibles<sup>1</sup> under Major Macdonald, was despatched to deal with the evil. Crossing the frozen St. Lawrence early in the morning of February 13, 1813, the party proceeded towards Ogdensburg, an exceptionally strong American post. When within two hundred yards of the blockhouses they were observed and promptly fired on, but knowing that the more quickly an attacking party advances the less risk it runs from artillery fire, they charged boldly forward. Clambering up the steep frozen bank they fell upon the entrenched and numerically superior enemy with the bayonet. Driven from the guns and trenches into the forest, the Americans barricaded themselves in the blockhouses and cottages, but they were speedily cut up by the British guns.

After bombarding the main fort the English carried it at the point of the bayonet, and afterwards drove the enemy from the adjacent woods.

The spoils of battle were considerable. Four officers and seventy men were taken prisoners. Eleven guns, two armed schooners, a couple of gunboats and the whole of the enemy's arms, ammunition and

<sup>1</sup> It is especially interesting to know that the successors of this early Canadian Highland regiment, the Glengarry Invincibles, have been fighting shoulder to shoulder with the King's Liverpools during the Great War. Both units have distinguished themselves, and have won each other's regard and admiration just as their predecessors did over a century ago.

---

## *Ogdensburg and Toronto*

---

stores were captured. Amongst the trophies were two stands of American colours, which General Sir George Provost sent to the Prince Regent. These now adorn the walls of Chelsea Hospital. After burning to the ground the blockhouses and a couple of barracks the party returned to Prescott.

Two months later another body of the King's won similar distinction in the neighbourhood of York, now known as Toronto. Three companies totalling 193 men were on their way to Fort George, when they halted at the latter town. At daybreak, on the morning after their arrival, an American fleet was seen in the offing, and 1600 Americans landed with the intention of taking the town. The British force only totalled 600 men, and the greater number were militia, dock labourers and Indians. As a precautionary measure the King's and the militia were posted in the woods, and when the enemy advanced towards the blockhouses the British opened a brisk fire. Amazed at the temerity of the defenders, and resolved to crush them without delay, the enemy rushed forward in great numbers, but were effectually held in check for several hours. But the Americans were three to one, and they had several heavy guns and the help of their fleet. Realising that it was impossible to maintain their ground and that there was no prospect of obtaining reinforcements, General Sir George Sheafe, who was in command, wisely ordered a retreat. The stores were burnt, the guns dismantled and the arsenal blown up, and with it the American General Pike and a number of his men. The little British force then retired in good order. Some idea of the severity of the struggle may be gathered from the fact that 100 out of 193 members

---

## *Niagara River*

---

of the regiment were either killed, wounded or made prisoners.

Another detachment of the King's under Major Ogilvie had still more romantic adventures. It was stationed at Fort George on the morning of May 27, when the sentries observed an American fleet, accompanied by a flotilla of 100 boats, which conveyed a force of 5000 men, emerge from the slight haze which overhung the lake. The British force did not exceed 700, and fully one-third were Indians, while the five companies of the King's numbered less than 400 men with six officers.

Beaching their boats at Two Mile Creek the enemy landed a force of 3700 men and several guns. Both the landing and the advance were stoutly opposed by the King's and the irregulars, who kept up a galling fire from the shelter of the forest, but it was impossible to hold such an immense force. The Americans gradually won their way to the Fort, which was thereupon evacuated by the garrison after they had spiked the guns and burned the stores. The British happily succeeded in falling back on the Niagara river. During this exciting action the casualties of the King's totalled 202, of whom six were officers.

In due course the sadly depleted British force succeeded in reaching Burlington Heights, where Brigadier-General Vincent was in command of a mixed body of 1600 men. Soon after their arrival scouts reported that an American army of 3500 Foot and 250 Dragoons with several guns were advancing on the Fort. In face of such a strong force the British leaders did not wait to be attacked, but boldly took the offensive. The skeleton companies of the King's and the Forty-Ninth Regiment, mustering all told 704 officers and

---

## *Stoney Creek*

---

men, were despatched one evening to Stoney Creek, some seven miles distant, where 4000 enemy troops were encamped. Led by Indian scouts the expedition silently made its way through the dark forest, and just as dawn was breaking they roused the sleeping enemy with several well-aimed volleys. Taken completely by surprise and ignorant as to the strength of their assailants, the Americans had no time to organise resistance before the British soldiers charged them with the bayonet.

Never was a victory more complete. The enemy scattered in the wildest confusion and their commanders, Generals Chandler and Winter, were taken prisoners with 100 men. Moreover, three brass howitzers, three tumbrels and nearly all the camp equipment were captured. But although the enemy had been dispersed, fully 2500 of them still swarmed in the adjacent woods and kept up such a destructive fire on the British as to compel the latter to withdraw. The King's lost an officer and nine men killed and five officers and fifty-four men wounded. In reporting this brilliant affair Brigadier-General Vincent said—

“Major Ogilvie led on in the most gallant manner the five companies of the King's Regiment, and whilst one-half of that highly disciplined and distinguished corps supported the Forty-Ninth Regiment, the other part moved to the right and attacked the enemy's left flank, which decided our midnight contest.”

In the meantime another detachment of this ubiquitous regiment was also covering itself with glory at Sackett's Harbour. Brigaded with detachments from The Royal Scots, the 104th and the 100th Regiments, the Canadian Voltigeurs and the Glengarry Light Infantry, they embarked on Lake Ontario and



---

## *At Black Rock, 1814*

---

reached the harbour during the night. The strong current prevented them landing until day dawned; consequently the projected surprise failed, and they were greeted with searching musketry fire from the wooded hills behind the harbour. Despite this, the troops landed and entered the forest in the hope of coming to close grips with their elusive enemies. The Americans took advantage of every bit of cover, but after a three hours' fight they were compelled to retire, whereupon their camp was burnt. Colonel Baynes, the officer in command of the British force, now resolved to return to Kingston. In his report he concludes with the words—

“The detachment of the King's under Major Evans nobly sustained the high and established character of that distinguished regiment.”

The exploits of Major Evans and the light company of the King's under his command during July 1814 read like a page from Dumas. Having ascertained that an American army 6000 strong had marched along the bank of the Niagara river and encamped opposite Black Rock, a strongly fortified post on the further bank of the stream, Major-General Rial with 480 men of the King's, 500 of The Royal Scots, and about 1000 from other units, advanced to the attack in three columns, the King's leading. In the meantime, the enemy had been reinforced by a large body of riflemen, who were secreted in the forest, and so harassed the British that General Rial ordered a retirement to Chippewa and selected the King's as rearguard.

As the enemy advanced in overwhelming numbers the retreat was continued to Fort George. On July 7, while the Americans were encamped within three miles

---

### *Major Evans' Exploit*

---

of the British, Major Evans took advantage of the darkness to advance cautiously with the light company of the King's to a log hut situated midway between the rival forces. He had hoped to seize the American Generals, who were reported to hold their war councils in it, but to his keen disappointment Evans found the hut empty. Immediately afterwards an Indian scout reported that an American detachment had taken up a position between the hut and the British force, and the enemy leaders were evidently under the impression that the hut was the secret headquarters of the British staff. Each party hoped to catch the other napping. Before Major Evans and his officers had recovered from their surprise a scattered volley came from the direction of the British camp. Realising that he was in a very awkward trap, Evans promptly set about escaping from it. Ordering his men to creep on their hands and knees, he took a course parallel to the two armies and soon had his little company out of the danger zone. But the enemy were now thoroughly on the alert. While a body of American riflemen advanced on the hut from the main force, the cutting-off party retraced its steps. As they approached the deserted building the two detachments mistook each other for the enemy and opened a brisk fire. Several of their number were killed and wounded before the error was discovered.

In the meantime several members of the King's had surprised and gagged an enemy scout. Stripping him of his clothing the Major donned the brown coat and round hat, after which he directed the company to scatter and to make their way as best they could to No. 1 Redoubt on the Niagara river. He then turned his steps in the direction of the hut, entered into

---

### *Lundy's Lane, 1814*

---

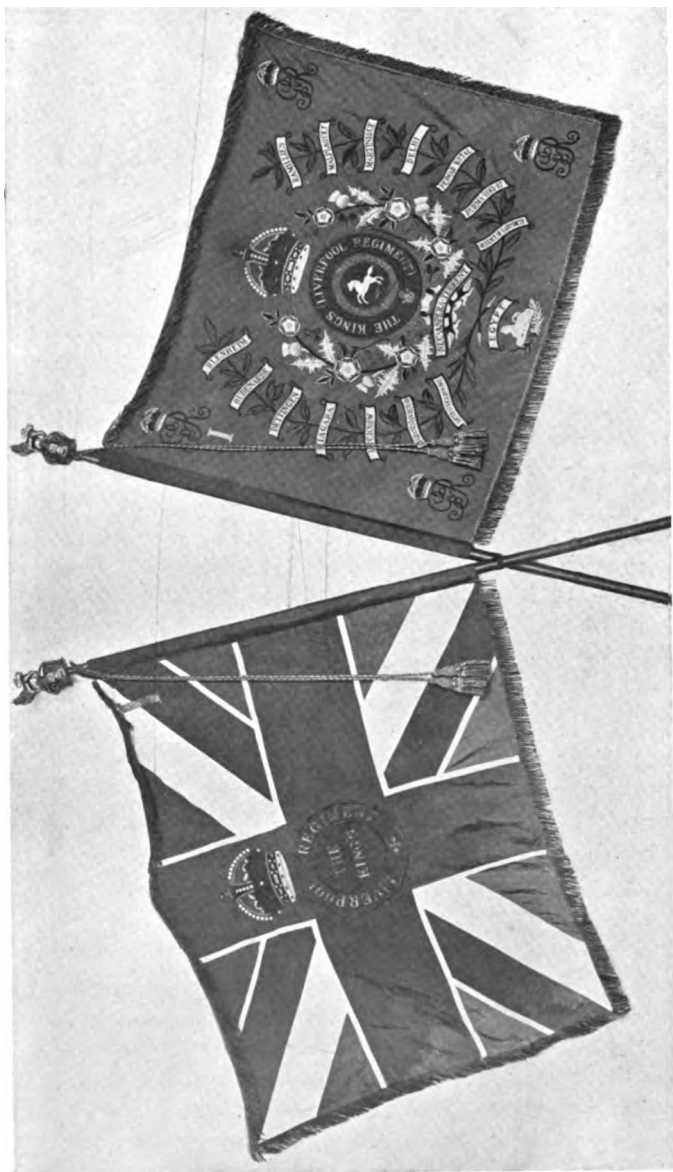
conversation with several Americans, incidentally gathering important information, and then made his escape in the darkness, ultimately joining his men at the rendezvous. This incident cost the enemy dearly, for their General Swift was killed with a number of his men.

During Swift's funeral the British retired to Twenty Mile Creek, the King's again acting as rear-guard. Soon afterwards the Americans withdrew, followed by the British, and a serious encounter took place at Lundy's Lane. As the enemy were in an overwhelming majority they assailed the British centre. A strong body of American infantry charged up the hill, bayoneted the gunners, and were about to remove the pieces when a mixed body of English Foot comprising the King's, The Royal Scots, and the Hundredth under the command of Captain Campbell of the King's, drove them back at the point of the bayonet and saved the artillery. This fierce hand-to-hand fight lasted until midnight. At last British steadiness and discipline told, and the enemy withdrew towards Fort Erie, after setting fire to some buildings and destroying the bridge at Chippewa. The King's had lost eighty-five officers and men.

In his dispatch Lieut.-General Drummond warmly praises the whole of the troops and concludes with—

“The detachment of the King's Regiment under Captain Campbell, by whom the brunt of the action was for a considerable time sustained and whose loss has been severe.”

When the enemy retreated to Fort Erie the British promptly laid siege to it. The King's again took a leading part in the operations. The attack on Snake Hill and the adjacent blockhouses deserves more than



THE COLOURS OF THE FIRST BATTALION.



---

## *"Niagara" on the Colours*

---

passing notice, inasmuch as it gives another variant of the many-sided fights whereby the integrity of Canada was won. The King's, led by Major Evans, made a silent and circuitous march during the night of August 15, 1814—the rain pouring in torrents. They sought to traverse a narrow lane which ran parallel with the lake, but so severe was the enemy's fire that they were compelled to fall back. Quickly rallying, they entered the water of the storm-swept lake and waded breast-high over the rocks to the abattis, which they endeavoured to penetrate, but in face of the enemy's deadly fire they were compelled to abandon the attempt, with forty-eight casualties.

On September 17 the regiment fared even worse, for a strong body of Americans issued suddenly from the fort and assailed the British posts. The King's bore the brunt of the attack. No. 2 Battery was carried by the Americans, but they did not hold it long. The King's, recovering from their surprise and supported by De Watteville's regiment, charged with the bayonet and drove the enemy back with great loss. The victory was dearly bought, for the regiment lost an officer and thirteen men killed, an officer and twelve men wounded, and three officers and seventy-one men reported missing.

The regiment had been practically reduced to a skeleton, and when the siege was raised on September 21 it was sent to Montreal to recover. The honour of having "Niagara" inscribed on its colours had been richly earned. On entering into this arduous campaign it roundly numbered 1000 officers and men. During 1813-14 it lost 743 of its number. Few regiments, even during the Peninsular War, paid a heavier toll to the God of War.

---

## *Second Battalion, 1804-15*

---

As the 2nd Battalion established in 1804 was short-lived, it may be well to record its brief history here. The first five years of its existence were spent in England and Scotland. In July 1809 its flank companies embarked for Holland on an abortive expedition. During the early part of 1810 it was stationed in Jersey, but in August six companies were sent to Nova Scotia, where they remained four years. In February 1814, when the rigours of winter were at their worst, the men were supplied with snowshoes. Under the command of Lieut.-Colonel Evans, some of whose exploits as a Major in the 1st Battalion have been already described, they began their long and arduous march of several hundred miles over an ice-bound country to the great lakes, accompanied by 280 seamen chosen for service on these inland seas.

Early in the following September these weather-beaten troops formed part of a force under Sir George Prevost. Crossing the frontier the British assailed the American town of Plattsburg, which was defended by three redoubts and two strong blockhouses. But the American Fleet was double the strength of the English; the attack failed and the British retired to Canada. Soon afterwards peace was declared.

On July 15, 1815, the battalion, embarked for England. Later in the year it was disbanded, and its men transferred to the 1st Battalion, whose strength was thereby increased to 1075 officers and men. Forty-three years were to elapse before another 2nd Battalion was established.

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER IX

#### THE INDIAN MUTINY, DELHI, 1857

Half a century of Peace—Fort Pillour—First use of Khaki—  
Siege of Delhi—Private John Brown—Storming the  
Water Bastion—Fall of the City.

THE half century which followed the overthrow of Napoleon was peaceful, yet big with the fate of empires. Strong in the belief that military despotism and great wars belonged to the past, the British people devoted themselves to industry and commerce and neglected elementary precautions. The Crimean War and the Indian Mutiny were amongst the firstfruits of this unfortunate policy, for the belief was universal that Great Britain neither would nor could act with vigour, and that she was prepared to sacrifice everything to the huckstering spirit. Bismarck reckoned on it when he assailed the Danes in 1864, the Austrians in 1866, and the French in 1870. The cession of Heligoland in 1890, the unhappy South African War, and the conviction of the German Government down to the outbreak of war in August 1914 that England would not fight, were all the outcome of this policy. Had this country saved Denmark from spoliation in 1864, history would have run in a different channel and the Great War might have been impossible.

The King's Liverpool, like other famous regiments, experienced to the full the decadence of the country's



---

## *Peace Service, 1816-56*

---

military prestige. When the 1st and 2nd Battalions were amalgamated the result was a regiment of full strength. Three years were spent in Ireland, and in January 1818 the corps embarked for Malta, afterwards assisting to quell the Greek rising. Five years were spent at home, from 1825 to 1830, when its six service companies went to Nova Scotia and spent six years there and in the West Indies. The four reserve companies were quartered in Guernsey. When they left the Royal Court of Guernsey placed on record its high appreciation of the good conduct and discipline of these companies while stationed on the island. Arriving in Ireland in December 1841, the reunited regiment was received by the Lord Lieutenant in March 1843, and after that it was stationed for some time in various Lancashire towns.

When the King's received orders to proceed to India in March 1846, its numbers were increased from 888 to 1131 officers and men. Embarking on five troop-ships the battalions did not reach Bombay until August, the voyage having taken from 94 to 107 days.

It is unnecessary to retail the routine existence of the battalion during the ten years preceding the Great Mutiny. At the half-yearly inspection in November 1856 the full muster totalled 985 officers and men. When the mutiny broke out it was stationed at Jullundur, guarding the bridge over the Sutlej with some native units. Happily Colonel Hartley, who was in temporary command of the regiment, was an officer of ability and resolution, and when informed of the Meérut outbreak he immediately sent a small detachment of two officers and 162 men under Major Baynes to occupy Fort Pillour on the

---

## *The Indian Mutiny*

---

banks of the river at the head of the bridge of boats. They were just in time, for the mutineers had decided to seize the Fort next day, but this resolute action overawed them.

The position of the King's at this time was one of some danger. After deducting the Pillour detachment and thirty-two men in hospital the regiment numbered 725 men, whereas the Sepoys totalled 2200. Undaunted by numbers, however, Brigadier Johnstone placed the women and children under a guard of 100 men, sent another detachment to harness the guns, and drew up the main body ready for action. As the artillery lines were three-quarters of a mile away, the order was given for the main body to proceed thither. Owing to a sandstorm the battalion lost its way, and when its destination was at last reached it found the small detachment sent to defend the guns engaged in a fierce fight with a vastly superior body of Sepoys; but a few rounds of grape and a well-aimed volley from the new-comers soon sent the rebels to the right-about.

During the night the mutineers decamped towards Delhi, and the next morning the Brigadier despatched in pursuit a force of 326 men with six guns, under the command of Colonel Longfield. On reaching the right bank of the river and finding that the enemy had a start of several miles, the Colonel decided that it would be folly to plunge into the heart of the mutinous country without adequate preparation, and he returned to headquarters.

When the regiment left Jullundur on June 15, '57, to join the force besieging Delhi under Sir Henry Barnard, it mustered 21 officers and 350 men. With the addition of the King's, who arrived on the 28th, the besieging army comprised 3900 infantry and 900

---

## *The King's first in Khaki*

---

cavalry, 28 field-pieces and 16 siege-guns; the rebel forces totalled 30,000 men, with 60 field-guns, and 114 heavy pieces mounted on the walls. These walls were exceedingly strong and well-manned; the garrison was amply supplied with food and ammunition; the inhabitants were actively sympathetic with the rebel cause, and confidence and good order reigned within the city. Obviously the task of the British was a difficult one.

Now that practically four million Imperial troops are dressed in khaki, it is worth remembering that the King's claims to be the first British regiment to adopt this colour. During the siege of Delhi it was noticed that the Sikh khaki uniform showed less conspicuously against the mud-coloured walls and trenches than the red, blue and white then generally worn by the besiegers. After its adoption by the King's it gradually came into general use.

On July 9, 1857, the regiment formed part of a body sent to dislodge a large force of rebels occupying a thickly wooded garden on the extreme right of the British position. As a number of houses had been loopholed, trenches made and several guns placed at commanding situations, it was a difficult point to take. The King's occupied the place of honour, but the ground was too broken up for manœuvring, and the men had to scatter and take cover. Ultimately the enemy were driven back, but on being strongly reinforced advanced again. Surrounding a large serai, or native lodging-house, occupied mainly by the King's, they made many desperate attempts to carry the building by assault. When, however, the defenders began to run short of ammunition, and the enemy were breaking down the walls with heavy guns, Colonel

---

## *Siege of Delhi, 1857*

---

Greathed, who was in command of the little British force, decided to withdraw. His brother, Lieutenant Greathed of the Bengal Engineers, and a number of his men volunteered to hold the entrance gate while the main body made their exit by the back. This officer met a glorious death while blowing up the Cashmere Gate soon afterwards.

When this retirement had been safely effected Lieutenant Greathed's little party endeavoured to follow, but finding their retreat cut off they were compelled to force their way through. In this hand-to-hand struggle it was impossible to fire, and the fight was waged with clubbed weapons and bayonets. Here it was that Private John Brown of the King's especially distinguished himself. Seizing the barrel of his musket with his two hands he whirled it round and brought the butt down with terrific force on the dark heads before him. When at last the butt broke off, he used the barrel with one hand while he deftly wielded the bayonet with the other. He did such execution and seemed so immune from fire and sword, that the rebels gave way and ultimately he and his party won their way through. For this gallant conduct he was promoted corporal.

In these daily encounters with the enemy the King's played a prominent part. On one occasion, when the rebels assailed the British right, a strong picket of the battalion repulsed them. And again, on the 23rd, it drove back a strong sortie. The enemy having captured several houses, the British retook them, whereupon the guns on the city walls opened fire with such effect as to drive the besiegers back, and it was not until several British batteries came on the scene that the balance was restored.

---

## *The Assault on September 14*

---

The arrival of reinforcements in August soon put a different complexion on the siege. Lieut.-Colonel Greathed, with the King's and other units, 650 men in all, was ordered to seize Ludlow Castle, a strong advanced post on the outskirts of the city, as well as Kudsiabagh, a fortified garden two hundred yards from the great walls, and within a stone's throw of the Cashmere Gate, where some of the most heroic deeds of the siege were performed. These tasks were duly accomplished.

Three great breaches having been made in the city walls, at three o'clock in the morning of September 14 the British troops selected for the final assault moved forward in three columns; the King's were in the second, which was under the command of Brigadier Jones of the Sixty-First Regiment. Their orders were to storm the Water Bastion, only a short distance from Kudsiabagh. The 280 men comprising the column were divided into four companies, the first being the storming party with ladders, under the command of Captain G. E. Baynes.

After a ration of rum had been served, the men advanced in the darkness to the walls, where they lay down under the shadow of a small temple until daybreak. At last the blowing up of Cashmere Gate gave the signal for the assault, and the party hurried to the breach in the curtain of the Water Bastion. As the King's storming party was heavily handicapped by the ladders, their supports, the two companies of the King's, with detachments from the Second Fusiliers and the Fourth Sikh Infantry arrived first at the opening, and passing through reached the ramparts.

But a very singular mistake had been made. This was not the breach the second column had been ordered

---

## *The Water Bastion*

---

to assail. In compliance with their instructions the King's storming party proceeded to the shattered wall in the Water Bastion. The subsequent events are best described in the words of Captain Baynes who led it. Writing two days after the assault he says—

“ Off we went at a trot up the glacis (the distance was about one hundred and fifty yards). It was now broad daylight. I looked at the wall and saw it crammed with Sepoys. The wall, in perfect order except just at the breach, was twelve feet wide. I hope I may never see again a carnage like that which followed. A nine-pounder played upon us with grape from the bastion and a fearful fire of musketry from the walls—steady rapid file firing—unchecked by the fire of a covering party, and not a shot was returned. You may easily imagine the consequence to a party advancing steadily and slowly in face of such a fire. The men were knocked down by sixes and sevens. Young Greathed was one of the first wounded, Metge also fell, and ladder after ladder went down. When I got within thirty yards of the edge of the ditch I looked round, and out of eighteen ladders I saw only three left. I ran on to the edge to see what sort of a place was before us, and called out to the ladder-bearers to hurry on. I don't know what occurred after this as I fell to the ground and remained insensible for a few minutes. When I recovered I saw no one standing near me, but two grenadiers were lying down a short distance off. I was too much exhausted to move; besides, to lie still was the best thing to do. The fire from the walls continued as heavy as ever. I knew that three-quarters of the storming party were knocked over, and I looked in vain for the strong supports that were to follow us. We were evidently left to shift for ourselves. Suddenly the fire from the walls ceased. I got up and with the few men left went into the ditch and into the bastion. In it we found some artillerymen who had got in through the Cashmere Gate and breach. In the ditch I found eight of our men killed and Pogson wounded by grape, lying all together. It was Pogson who brought up the ladders after I fell—poor fellow. Nothing could exceed his coolness. Metge also behaved admirably. As soon as we saw we had no covering party we knew it was a desperate affair, but not a man flinched. When I got into the bastion I could only muster twenty-five men and one sergeant. As the storming party consisted of five officers (including engineers) and seventy-five men, this would make our loss in killed and wounded four officers and fifty men.”

---

## *The Cabul Gate*

---

In justice to the gallant officer it may be explained that Captain Baynes was ill at the time, and insisted on leading the forlorn hope against the advice of the regimental doctor.

All the officers of the storming party were placed *hors de combat*, and Colour-sergeant Walker, who had greatly distinguished himself during the assault, took charge of the surviving twenty-five men. As the party could not find their regiment they were temporarily attached to a battery of artillery under Major Brand, and so continued for several days assisting to work the guns. Walker was afterwards awarded the Distinguished Conduct Medal.

Happily the misunderstanding as to the breach to be stormed took a fortunate turn. The assault on the curtain, by distracting the attention of the rebels, enabled the first and third columns to obtain a footing within the walls.

Failing to secure an entrance by the curtain breach, the larger body of the second column (the one that had gone astray) took shelter under the high walls, and, filing to the right, passed through the third column on its way to storm the Moree Bastion. It ultimately reached the Cabul Gate, which was promptly carried; but as the enemy was strongly posted in the adjacent streets, and also held both sides of the canal, the main body halted. So far as the second column was concerned this was a day of confusion worse confounded. Owing to still another misunderstanding, Lieutenants Bagley, Stebbing and McGregor, with two of the King's companies and a number of men from other units, advanced until they reached the Lahore Bastion. As they were exposed to heavy fire from a field-piece and also from musketry, they

---

## *The Lahore Gate*

---

carried the gun with a rush and then took cover from the murderous fire from the houses, leaving the cannon in the hands of the enemy.

Meanwhile, General Nicholson arrived at the Cabul Gate with the first column and relieved the small party of the King's and the Second Fusiliers. He next proceeded to the Lahore Gate, where Lieutenant Bagley and his party were sheltering. Having recaptured and spiked the gun already mentioned, he turned his attention to another piece posted in a narrow lane along which he wished to pass. As his men were crowded in a confined corner and the cannon was well served, a number of the British were mown down. Despite General Nicholson's commands, entreaties and examples, his men hesitated to advance to what seemed certain death. A moment later he too was cut down, falling back into the arms of Lieutenant Bagley. After attempting to walk he had to be taken to the rear, while his men retired in disorder closely followed by the enemy. At this moment the main body of the King's arrived, and by their vigorous charge helped to turn the tables on the rebels.

Later in the day Colonel Greathed with a strong party of the King's and the Fourth Sikhs advanced under a heavy fire to the Lahore Gate, and, having taken possession of several large houses, checked the enemy's fire until a number of siege-guns were brought up. On the following day 2000 rebels attacked a great dwelling-house occupied by the King's and the Sikhs, but they were speedily driven off and several other buildings on the Canal bank were captured. On the 16th the magazine was stormed, and on the 17th the Delhi Bank was captured.

Colonel Greathed suggested the despatch of a



---

## *Delhi Occupied*

---

small force up a narrow lane giving access to the rear of the Lahore Gate, and was instructed to carry out his plan. His force of 300 men and two guns was made up of detachments of the King's, the Seventy-Fifth and the First Bengal Fusiliers. They had proceeded some distance without interruption when a large gate was suddenly thrown open revealing a six-pounder gun and a strong force of rebels supporting it. The first discharge caused such havoc amongst the Seventy-Fifth that they hesitated to charge. The King's were then ordered forward, and under cover of the smoke the two detachments advanced at the double and carried the gate. But they had jumped out of the frying-pan into the fire. As they proceeded they found that the houses on each side of the road were packed with Sepoys, who began firing on them at close range. It was madness to go forward and suicidal to remain, so Colonel Greathed wisely ordered the force to fall back.

Thanks to the help of the Engineers, the inner connecting walls of a number of empty houses were broken through, and the British enabled to take the enemy in the flank. Having again won their way to the rear of the Lahore Gate they found it deserted, whereupon it was occupied by a small body of English, and ultimately proved of considerable advantage in the capture of the city.

On September 20 it was ascertained that the King of Delhi and the rebel army had fled. The sacred city was accordingly occupied by the British, and a vital blow was struck at the *morale* of the rebels.

When the King's joined the investing army on June 28, 1857, it mustered 362 officers and men. During

---

### *Losses of the King's*

---

the succeeding three months it lost 281 killed, wounded, missing or died of disease, leaving a regimental strength of 81. Its heroic deeds and sacrifices during this formidable siege certainly richly entitled it to the honour of having "Delhi" inscribed on its colours.

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER X

#### THE INDIAN MUTINY, 1857-1858

Battle of Agra—Relief of Lucknow—Fighting at Cawnpore—  
Subduing the Rebel Provinces.

ALTHOUGH the British public did scant justice to the soldiers who served the Empire with such devotion, self-sacrifice and endurance amid the snows of the Crimea and on the plains of India, we who are reaping the fruit of their patriotism and effort may well thank God that they lived and died for us. The respect of the world in arms, a spirited Empire and a loyal India are the harvest, the seed of which they sowed amid hardship and suffering. The manner in which the British soldiers acquitted themselves during the critical years between 1851 and 1860 form one of the most glorious chapters in our long island story, and is one to which an educated posterity will devote increasing attention.

Despite the fatigue of the siege of Delhi no time was allowed the British soldiers for rest. On September 21, 1857, the King's Liverpool as part of a column of 2800 men, of whom only one-third were British, under Lieut.-Colonel Greathed, began their march towards the rebel-infested districts lying between the Jumna and the Ganges. This force first came in contact with a body of Sepoys 3500 strong, with seven guns, at Bulandshahr on the 28th. The

---

## *March to Agra*

---

latter occupied a strong position, but they soon broke and fled when the King's and the Seventy-Fifth advanced with the bayonet. Once in the open they proved an easy prey to the loyal cavalry, being pursued many miles, and leaving a couple of their guns as well as vast stores in the hands of the victors.

During the first week of October two parties of rebels were broken up with the loss of 400 men and several guns, and on the 8th Colonel Greathed received an urgent appeal for help from Agra, where many fugitive Europeans had congregated. In spite of their exhaustion the men nobly responded to the call, and by making a forced march of thirty miles reached the city in time to anticipate an attack by 7000 rebels. We have a graphic picture of the state of the British soldiers as they entered the city in Raikes' *Notes on the Agra Revolt*.

"We went this morning to see Colonel Greathed's column cross the bridge. The Queen's Eighth (now the King's Liverpool) passed within three yards of us. 'Those dreadful-looking men must be Afghans,' said a lady to me as they slowly and wearily marched by. I did not discover they were Englishmen till I saw a short clay pipe in the mouth of nearly the last man. My heart bled to see these jaded, miserable objects, and to think of all they must have suffered since May last to reduce fine Englishmen to such worn, sun-dried skeletons."

As the camp equipment had not arrived, orders were given to ground arms, and the poor fellows threw themselves on the hot hard earth to snatch a brief sleep. This was, however, denied them, for scouts reported that instead of the enemy being a few miles away, as was generally believed, they were concealed amid the growing crops just outside the city. On being unmasked they promptly opened fire, but they were no match for the British artillery,

---

## *The March to Lucknow*

---

whose shells searched the corn and paddy fields and inflicted great loss on them. While threatening a frontal attack Colonel Greathed sent the King's and the Ninth Punjabis with a nine-pounder battery to turn the enemy's left flank, at the same time making a strong demonstration with his cavalry on the right. These movements were thoroughly successful. Not only was the enemy's left turned, but the King's captured several guns as well as some standards, a feat for which they were mentioned in dispatches. On the other hand, the Sepoys had made some impression on the British centre, where they captured a gun, but on the Lancers charging they took to flight. When the newly arrived column was reinforced by a part of the Agra garrison the enemy broke and fled, and on being hotly pursued by the British cavalry for thirteen miles, left their twelve heavy guns and their stores in the hands of the victors. As the sorely tried little force had been on the march, or in action, for thirty-six hours, during which the cavalry had covered sixty-four miles and the infantry fifty-four, their three days' rest at Agra was especially welcome.

The column resumed its march to Cawnpore with a burning desire to avenge the dreadful massacre of Europeans which had taken place a few weeks earlier. Arriving on October 26, the tired soldiers found the Fifth, the Fifty-Third, the Sixty-Fourth, the Seventy-Eighth and the Madras Fusiliers, mustering altogether about 1000 men, entrenched to protect the bridge of boats over the Ganges, but considerable reinforcements under Sir Colin Campbell were hourly expected from Calcutta.

Matters were in a very parlous state for the British, and it was obvious that the slightest error or hesita-

---

## *In the Dilkoosha Palace*

---

tion on the part of their commanders would result in some crushing disaster. Overwhelming forces of Sepoys surrounded Lucknow and threatened the small isolated British garrisons scattered throughout the rebel provinces. It was common knowledge that if the English did not immediately take the offensive, a considerable number of native troops who were known to be disaffected would declare for the enemy. Selecting the Delhi column (whose adventures we have followed) as his nucleus, Brigadier Hope Grant augmented it until it was 4000 strong, the King's forming part of the right wing.

On approaching Lucknow the British were assailed by a strong force of the enemy, but after a sharp skirmish the latter retreated to the city with the loss of a hundred men and one gun. On November 7 Sir Colin Campbell arrived with reinforcements, and promptly rearranged the army, the King's being placed in the Third Brigade, which was under the command of Colonel E. H. Greathed.

When the first energetic steps for the relief of the garrison were begun, the British force did not exceed 5000 men, whereas the rebels totalled 30,000, and they were sheltered by strong walls and formidable defences. At seven o'clock on the morning of the 14th the attack was opened by the Third Brigade capturing the Dilkoosha Palace on the outskirts of the city. The King's formed the garrison of the Palace until the 24th. In the meantime the main British force turned to the east, and after traversing a considerable part of the environs of Lucknow stormed the formidable Secunder Bagh, and later in the day captured Shah Nujjeef, a fortified mosque. After the barracks had been taken the imprisoned British in the Residency

---

## *Retirement to Cawnpore*

---

were relieved on the 20th, and during the three following days were removed to the Dilkosha Palace and the neighbouring Martinière Buildings.

After the sick and helpless had been despatched to Alumbagh, the King's were sent to Bunnee to protect the sappers repairing the bridge carrying the road to Cawnpore. Three days later, on the 27th, the British army resumed its march towards that city of dreadful memories, and when within twenty-seven miles of it the sound of heavy firing gave the alarm. But they were encumbered with a huge convoy, which would be at the mercy of the enemy if not strongly guarded, and progress was accordingly slow. When they did reach the bank of the Ganges it was to find that the small British force in Cawnpore had been driven into entrenchments by the Gwalior rebels 23,000 strong. The enemy were making such progress that it was only a question of a very few hours before they would have had General Wyndham and his sorely harassed men completely at their mercy. Realising the critical state of affairs, Sir Colin Campbell was prompt to act. He and his staff spurred across the wooden bridge, followed by the King's, who had been ordered to protect the structure. Happily for the British, Tantia Topi, by far the ablest of the rebel leaders, sought to remedy his mistake in leaving the bridge intact by now concentrating on it a considerable portion of his artillery fire, but his guns were soon silenced by the British batteries. In a short time the whole of the relieving force was streaming across, their movements covered by the King's, who kept up a rapid and destructive fire on the enemy from the bridge-head.

When the passage of the Ganges had been accom-

---

## *Cawnpore Re-taken*

---

plished, the King's, the Sixty-Fourth and the Third Punjab Infantry under Brigadier Greathed—recently promoted—occupied the Ganj, a strongly fortified post near the Canal. This small body rendered such good service by holding the enemy in check at this important point, and compelling him to concentrate the greater part of his force in the centre, that the British Commander-in-Chief was able to turn the rebel left.

After the convoy of 600 sick, wounded and refugees from Lucknow had been sent to Calcutta, Sir Colin suddenly attacked the enemy, the King's coming in for an exceptional share of the fighting, because the rebels made a determined effort to break the British left. Driven out of the city, the Sepoys made a stubborn stand at their entrenched camp, but the heavy guns of the Naval Brigade played such havoc in their ranks that they fell back in some confusion. Their discomfiture was completed when the British and Highland regiments, fired by the knowledge that they were now dealing with the miscreants who had perpetrated the massacre, charged them with the bayonet, neither giving nor taking quarter, and the road to Bithoor became a veritable shambles. For miles it was a mass of struggling, terror-stricken wretches, plunging horses, heavy guns, deserted baggage-wagons and the costly equipages of rebel chiefs. Arms and ammunition, food, clothing and looted treasures, everything which could impede their headlong flight was cast aside by the panic-stricken Sepoys and camp-followers, who felt that Nemesis, in the shape of the avenging British soldier, was at their heels and bent on retribution. Here, at any rate, the mutiny was completely crushed; but it still



---

## *Defending the Ganges Bridge*

---

reared its head in other parts of India, and the task of the British was still hard.

On January 1, 1858, while some sappers were repairing one of the bridges across the Ganges, they were assailed by a big force of the enemy. The Fourth Brigade held them in check for a time, but they would probably have succeeded in their object had not Sir Colin Campbell and the main body of the British hurried to the rescue. The rebels then beat a hasty retreat, after losing four guns and a considerable number of men. During this engagement the King's Liverpools met with one of those disasters which no forethought can obviate. The battalion was standing at attention some five hundred yards from the enemy, awaiting orders, when a six-pounder ball struck a man in the front line, and passing obliquely through the ranks killed five men and wounded a sixth. As the regiment's casualties only totalled eight, the shot in question was an unfortunate one. But retribution was swift and unerring, for one of the eight-inch howitzers belonging to the Naval Brigade quickly made an end of the enemy six-pounder. The first shot broke one of the wheels, the second dismounted the gun, and the third blew up the tumbril. Shortly afterwards the King's was complimented by the Commander-in-Chief on its good order and discipline.

Later in the month, when the Third Brigade was broken up, the regiment was despatched to Agra with two guns, although its losses had been so heavy that it now scarcely numbered enough men to make up a full company. Happily it was joined by a draft of 135 recruits from England while on the march, whereupon its traditional high spirits revived.

---

## *Fighting round Agra*

---

On reaching Agra the battalion was formed into flying detachments in order to scour the surrounding country and round up parties of marauding rebels. The largest comprised three officers and 208 men. In common with several other units under Brigadier Showers it compelled one of the largest of these roving parties to take refuge in some ravines bordering the river Chambal. The rebels had made elaborate preparations for defence in the shape of strong trenches and loopholed houses, but when two companies of the King's advanced with several well-aimed volleys, followed by a bayonet charge, they broke and fled, leaving a hundred of their number killed or wounded, whereas the King's had not a single casualty.

During its five months' stay at Agra, the strength of the battalion was increased by steady drafts to eleven officers and 732 men. It afterwards spent a couple of months at Futtehghurh, when it furnished detachments for a variety of purposes. One acted as an escort to a large ammunition train proceeding from Raniganj to Cawnpore; another was sent to occupy Meerum-ke-Serai; a third was engaged in hunting down rebel bands, and a fourth took a prominent part against Koer Singh, in the capture of Pervo, and in keeping the communications open along the Grand Trunk Road. This last body was employed on this onerous duty for four months, and when it returned to headquarters on September 3 it was in a most pitiable plight. It had lost one-half its number through fighting and sickness; the survivors were ragged, shoeless, emaciated, unwashed and utterly exhausted. Their days had been spent in watching, marching and fighting, and their nights in frequent and feverish alarms. But they had borne

---

## *Sandi Fort*

---

their severe trials without complaining, and with a single-hearted desire to do their duty and make an end of as many rebels as possible. Such heroism and devotion is the sweetest incense which can be offered on the altar of an empire.

By October 18 the regimental strength had declined to 550. It was now attached to one of the mobile columns destined to make an end of the mutiny in Oude, and it took a prominent part in capturing the strongly held port of Sandi<sup>1</sup> on the further bank of the Gorra.<sup>2</sup> The construction of a pontoon bridge was ultimately accomplished in the face of continuous fire, and three companies were hurried across to clear the walls of the enemy's sharpshooters, while the British artillery vigorously bombarded the fort. That night the rebels decamped and the place was blown up. The stronghold of Rooj was next captured and destroyed, the King's again leading the assault.

During the closing months of 1857 and the opening weeks of 1858 isolated detachments of the regiment were ever on the move. Into those three months, what experiences, what strange happenings and what sufferings were compressed! We who live under the dull grey skies of these temperate climes, where the satisfaction of bodily wants is ever at hand, can have little conception of the pain and hardship entailed by long marches over hot, arid wastes, across evil-smelling, fever-haunted swamps, through dense jungles where noisome death lurks in a thousand forms, or through hostile villages and over forest-covered plains where a watchful, baleful enemy invariably lurked to strike a treacherous blow. The nearest approach

<sup>1</sup> Holmes has this place SANDILA.

<sup>2</sup> Holmes spells this river GARRA.

---

## *Colonel Greathed's Services*

---

to it during the Great War are the experiences of the Second Battalion and the other portions of the Indian Expeditionary Force in the Persian Gulf and the Euphrates Valley, under much more comfortable conditions for the soldier than those obtaining during the Indian Mutiny.

With the return of these detachments to headquarters the active operations of the battalion came to an end. But the memory of the heroic dead was not forgotten, for the loyal survivors recorded their love and esteem on a memorial cross now standing in Queen Anne's Gardens, Liverpool, the depot of the regiment. Designed by Mr. H. S. Leifchild, it was erected on the Grand Parade, Portsmouth, in 1862; but in 1877 it was removed to Chelsea Hospital, where it remained until 1911, when it was taken to its final resting-place in Liverpool.

During these eventful two years many of the officers earned distinction. General Sir E. H. Greathead, K.C.B., its Colonel, was five times mentioned in dispatches; Captain John Hinde was mentioned four times, created a C.B., and promoted to brevet-colonel; Colonel John Longfield was mentioned once and created C.B.; Captain J. M. Bannatyne was mentioned six times, and was promoted to brevet-major; and Captain (afterwards Colonel) A. C. Robertson and Captain J. E. Baynes were also mentioned once.

When the battalion left Cawnpore for Calcutta early in January 1860, it mustered seventeen officers and 560 men, but a month later, and prior to leaving India, 250 men volunteered for active service in China. The remainder embarked for home on April 5, after fourteen years' arduous service. It is doubtful if more than a couple of dozen of the 910 members of

---

### *Praise for the Eighth*

---

the corps who left these shores in April 1846 returned. The graves of the remainder ranged from the slopes of the Himalayas to Cape Comorin. During the siege of Delhi, that is from May 31 to September 30, three officers and 41 men were killed and seven officers and 129 men wounded, while 58 died of sunstroke and cholera—a total of 238. During the rest of the campaign the casualties exceeded this number, but the most fruitful cause of sickness and death were fever and cholera.

Prior to its departure the Governor-General of India said in an order speaking of "Her Majesty's Eighth, the King's Regiment of Foot," when referring to the siege of Delhi—

"It bore a conspicuous part in the complete repulse given to the forces of the mutineers in their persevering sorties on the 14th, 18th and 23rd of July 1857; and in the glorious struggle within the city, which lasted for six days after it was stormed, the King's Regiment was amongst the foremost in exhibiting the irresistible efforts of the valour and endurance of British soldiers. . . . It subsequently served with the force under his Excellency the Commander-in-Chief in the relief of the garrison of Lucknow and at Cawnpore, and was afterwards employed in the final conquest of the Province of Oudh, and exhibited its characteristic bravery in the capture of the town and fort of Sandu."

•

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER XI

SOUTH AFRICA, 1899-1902

Siege of Ladysmith—V.C. won by Private Heaton, Corporal Knight and Sergeant Heaton—Boer attacks on Helvetia—Guerilla Warfare—Peace.

THE long peace of forty years following the Indian Mutiny afforded little opportunity for the display of the heroic virtues of the soldier. Certain events, however, stand out and are worthy of notice. In October 1863 Major W. Bagley, who had enlisted as a drummer-boy, in 1807, retired with the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel, after fifty-six years in the regiment. He died at Hastings in 1874, full of honours and with the esteem of his old comrades. On the night of March 12, 1864, when the battalion was stationed in Sheffield, one of the great reservoirs burst. The water rushed down the hill in a furious torrent, overwhelming many houses and factories, drowning 250 people, and causing damage to the extent of £300,000. A portion of the barracks was flooded and two young children drowned. It was fortunate that a strong and disciplined body of soldiers were quartered in the town at the time, for every man of the King's turned out and rendered such prompt and ready help that the battalion received the thanks of the Town Council, and the non-commissioned officers and men were entertained to dinner by the grateful citizens.

---

## *Regiment becomes the Liverpool*

---

After embarking for Malta in 1866, the corps proceeded thence to India by the overland route in the spring of 1868. The next four years were uneventful, but in 1873 the militia and volunteer service of Great Britain was reorganised. The King's Regiment was allotted to the Liverpool district, and the name of the great seaport incorporated in its title. In 1877 the battalion specially distinguished itself in marksmanship with the newly introduced Martini-Henry rifle. Out of ten British battalions stationed in the Presidency of Bombay the King's came out an easy first.

On returning to England in January 1879 after thirteen years' absence, the King's Liverpool mustered 511 officers and men, against 1526 when it departed in 1868. Twelve uneventful years were then spent in these islands. In February 1891 the corps embarked at Portsmouth for Bermuda, and there remained two years, followed by similar periods in Nova Scotia and the West Indies. In November 1897 the battalion embarked at Kingston for Capetown, and August 15, 1899, found it stationed at Ladysmith—a town it was to be associated with closely for several months, and the brave defence of which was in due course to be inscribed on the colours. The history of the regiment shows how strange and varied had been its duties, but another was added to the list. Early in August 200 transport mules were entrusted to the King's, and as nearly all were untrained, this ancient infantry regiment had to lay aside its pipeclay and buckram for the time being and break them in. At this time also a mounted infantry company had been formed, in accordance with modern requirements, with a strength of three officers and 117 men.

When war was declared between Great Britain

---

## *The Boer War, 1899*

---

and the South African Republics on October 12, 1899, orders were received that the corps would form part of a force under Colonel Ian Hamilton to proceed to Van Reenen's Pass, where some Boers were reported to be gathering. The expedition proved futile, for no trace of the enemy could be found.

Five days later the King's, with other detachments under the command of Colonel Wolsely Jenkins, were ordered to proceed to Pietermaritzburg to clear the railway from roving bands of Boers. The occasion was noteworthy, because it evoked an enthusiastic compliment from Sir George White altogether different from the ordinary stilted official utterances. Addressing the battalion before it marched, Sir George said—

"Colonel Mellor and men of the Liverpool Regiment—In sending you out of the command I do so with very much regret, but I am sure you will agree with me when I tell you it is in the interests of the service I do so. Since I have known you I have found you efficient in every way—good marchers, good at drill, and good in discipline. For the duty which you have now to perform I have selected you out of all the regiments in garrison. . . . I know that you will do your duty well, that you will execute it with credit to the regiment, for the preservation of the honour and integrity of your country."

A few hours after the arrival of the column at Colenso an urgent telegram was received recalling them to Ladysmith, information having been received that the enemy were marching to cut them off. Although the men were thoroughly exhausted the return march was begun at 3.30 in the morning, but on reaching Van Reenen's Pass the order was again countermanded. Ultimately the Hussars and artillery returned to Ladysmith on the 21st, but the King's were sent to hunt up the enemy at Modder River, another of those



---

## *In Ladysmith*

---

will-o'-the-wisp expeditions which so wearied the men and weakened the British arms. Finally, when the battalion did return to Ladysmith, it formed part of the Infantry Brigade under Ian Hamilton which was sent to Reitfontein to protect the Dundee convoys.

Skirmishes were now of daily occurrence, but even at the battle of Lombards Kop the casualties were few, for both sides had become adepts at taking cover.

On November 2, Ladysmith was cut off from the outside world. The Boers bombarded the town at irregular intervals, but the practice was poor and little damage was done.

The failure of the enemy to capture Cæsar's Camp on January 6 had a very depressing effect on them, and although the investment was rigorously carried out, it proved so unavailing that the siege was raised and squadrons of British cavalry from General Buller's force entered the city on February 28. The investment had lasted 118 days, during 75 of which the town was constantly under shell fire. During these monotonous months the King's were, for the most part, engaged in throwing up defences. Sir George White in his dispatch, dated Capetown, March 23 (the reference is to the Colonel of the regiment), says—

“The works constructed in his Section (B) were exceptionally strong and well-maintained. . . . The works constructed on his front (Section A) were models of semi-permanent entrenchments, laid out from the commencement on a plan which enabled him to strengthen them day by day until they became practically impregnable.”

It is obvious that the works so admirably carried

---

## *Action at Geluk Farm*

---

out at Ladysmith were a splendid training for the trench warfare in which the regiment is taking a share during the Great War. As the battalion took part in the battles of Mons, the Marne and the Aisne, the lessons perfected at Ladysmith were applied and emphasised in Flanders.

After a well-earned rest the Eighth Brigade under Major-General Howard, of which the King's formed part, resumed its wanderings. It first marched to Colenso, then to Ladysmith and on to the Modder Spruit, after which it spent a couple of months in occupying outlying posts such as Laing's Nek and Majuba Hill, where trenches were dug and elaborate preparations made to receive the enemy. But here it was all labour in vain, the Boers showing a marked reluctance to enter traps which were invitingly set for them. Space forbids, however, a detailed account of their innumerable marches and counter-marches in search of an enemy who seldom took visible shape.

On August 23 the Brigade marched to Geluk Farm, where a body of the enemy was reported. They were occupying a strong position on some rising ground, and a rocky ridge running from north to south crossed the farm. As it was necessary to screen this height a party of horse began the ascent, but were received by so hot a fire that strong reinforcements with guns were promptly sent to their help. While this movement was in progress the King's ascended the western slope without opposition. Companies F, H, G and A formed the front line, and the remaining five acted as a reserve. As they reached the crest the first-named companies formed an extended living target for the Boer marksmen, who were secreted behind boulders practically within a stone's throw. By some error

---

*Private Heaton's V.C.*

---

company F was separated from the other detachments, and companies C and E, unable to see their supports, advanced towards the Boer works about 500 yards distant, whereupon they were exposed to a most devastating fire. They did not, however, lose their nerve, but threw themselves on the ground and energetically returned the enemy's shots. Unfortunately the fortunes of war were dead against the brave Liverpools, for owing to the roar of a storm the sound of firing could not be heard by the rest of the British. The ammunition began to give out, and by four o'clock the survivors of the two companies had not a score of cartridges.

At this point Private William Heaton performed the deed which won him the Victoria Cross. A broad tract of land without a boulder, bush, or cover of any kind extended to the rear. It seemed, indeed, certain death for any one to attempt to cross such an exposed plateau in full view of the Boer marksmen, yet Private Heaton volunteered for the dangerous task of trying to reach the supports in order to secure reinforcements and ammunition. He achieved the apparently impossible, but neither reinforcements nor guns could be sent, for they had been despatched to another part of the field. Happily volunteers were forthcoming to convoy the necessary ammunition. Little time was lost, but darkness began to close in. The shadowy forms of the Boers were seen to be leaving their shelter and to be mustering for a massed attack on the two devoted Liverpool companies. At this critical moment the order to retire was sounded; a dozen men under Captain Hutson and Lieutenant Watt were left to fire the remaining cartridges at the advancing foe. Waiting until the Boers had approached to within forty

---

### *Corporal Knight's V.C.*

---

paces, they fired with such effect as to drive the enemy back and secure a brief respite.

In the meantime the rest of the battalion had been thoroughly roused by the danger of their comrades, and when the order was given they charged at the double after the retreating enemy. As they dashed onward they opened their ranks for their surviving comrades, and were sorely disappointed when the gathering night prevented them from taking summary vengeance.

This was one of the most dramatic episodes of the war. To every man of those companies death seemed certain, but there was no suggestion or desire to surrender or to resort to flight. There was no hesitation, no fear, no panic. How severe the ordeal had been may be gathered from the fact that the casualties of the two companies totalled seventy-four officers and men, whereas the losses of the rest of the British force on this day did not exceed thirty-one.

It was a curious coincidence that the three Victoria Crosses won by this battalion during the South African War were earned on the same ground and within a couple of days of each other. On August 21 Corporal Knight and four men were posted amongst some rocks in order to protect a detachment under Captain Ewart on the right of the extended line. Fifty of the enemy attacked Captain Ewart's party and all but surrounded it. Happily Corporal Knight pluckily held his ground while the captain's force retired to better cover. The corporal maintained his position over an hour, during which two of his men were wounded. He carried both back, leaving one in a safe shelter while he bore the other for nearly two miles, although the enemy were firing at him nearly all the time.

---

### *Sergeant Heaton's V.C.*

---

Sergeant Heaton won his Cross on the same day and at the same place. He was in command of a small body of mounted infantry holding an important position, but the odds against him were too heavy, and he was compelled to withdraw. Although wounded himself he saw his men in safety, and then supported Lance-corporal Walsh, who was wounded and unable to walk, until the latter was hit again and apparently killed. Soon after the brave sergeant was wounded a second time. He, like Corporal Knight and Private Heaton, was alive on the outbreak of the Great War, and all nobly again offered their services.

The next noteworthy incident connected with the adventures of the King's occurred on December 27, 1900, during Viljoen's attack on Helvetia. The post was held by a mixed force of 344 officers and men, with a 4.7 gun, under Major S. L. Cotton (of the King's Liverpool). It consisted of four separate kopjes, viz. King's Kopje, Gun Hill, South Hill and Middle Hill. The position was generally regarded as one of great strength, and was well protected by works and barbed wire. But General Viljoen knew every inch of the ground, a great advantage to a military leader. While one of his cornets with 120 men attacked Zwartkopjes, a fortified hill three miles distant which served as an outer fort for Helvetia, he arranged to deliver the direct assault on the latter post with 350 men. A third body consisting of 100 Boers was deputed to act as scouts, and to prevent any party of British approaching from Machadodorp.

At two o'clock in the morning of December 29 a thick fog had settled on the hills, and the Boers took up their position under its cover without in any way alarming the British. At 3.30 Viljoen gave the signal,

---

## *The Fight at Helvetia*

---

and a volley of musketry roused the little garrison, who promptly flew to arms. But they were too late, for the enemy dashed up the kopjes, captured Gun Hill and the 4·7 gun with its attendant twenty-four artillerymen. A good deal of unmerited censure has been passed on the King's Liverpool as well as the other defenders of Helvetia, and the following strictly impartial account taken from the official *History of the South African War*, by Sir Frederick Maurice, a general who went all through the campaign, is therefore of interest. He says—

“ This, the first blow, was tactically and morally the worst for the defence; for Gun Hill commanded the other knolls, whilst the officer in command of the Middle and South Hills, deprived of judgment by a severe wound in the head, thought nothing worth saving when the gun was lost, and ordered a surrender. Thus, only the isolated King's Kopje remained, and there the defenders, a half-company (65 men) of the Liverpool Regiment, under Lieutenant F. A. Wilkinson, knowing nothing of the capture of the cannon, resisted so stoutly that no effort of the enemy could reduce them. The value of this handful's tenacity appeared when, at daybreak, the Boers proceeded to remove their trophy and the prisoners, who numbered 235, from Gun Hill. This they began to do by way of the track running westward close below Helvetia Kopje and away from Zwartkopjes, which was now thoroughly alert and had brought two guns into action. But the undiminished shooting of Wilkinson's detachment effectually decided the route, and the captors of the gun, compelled to make a detour to the northward, came under the shrapnel from Zwartkopjes, which not only did execution, but forced them to abandon the only wagon-load of 4·7 projectiles and another containing the rifles of the prisoners of war. Viljoen then made off with his cortège towards Dulshoom, soon releasing the prisoners but retaining the gun, which was now nothing but an unwieldy trophy, for the loss of its store of ammunition had rendered it useless.”

Colour-sergeant A. Lees and Corporal R. Hargreaves of the Liverpools were awarded the Distinguished Conduct Medal for their gallantry on this occasion.

---

## *Distinguished Conduct Medals*

---

Three weeks later, at a small affair at Machadodorp, Corporal White of the same battalion earned the medal for his courageous conduct.

From the beginning of January 1901 to the close of the war the battalion was split up into detachments, in order to guard the line from Machadodorp to Godwan. The detachments, which never exceeded a company, were quartered round blockhouses about four hundred yards apart. These blockhouses were connected with headquarters by telephone; a fence of barbed wire ran along the side of the railway by way of additional precaution. There were occasional skirmishes, but the enemy was well watched and kept constantly on the move by the three and a half companies of Mounted Infantry which the battalion had organised during the war.

When peace was declared the battalion was again sent to Ladysmith, whereupon the Mayor wrote the commanding officer expressing the gratification of himself and the citizens at this renewal of old acquaintance; but the stay was not long, for on November 6, 1902, the corps, mustering 620, embarked at Durban for Rangoon, and 264 men not eligible for service in India sailed soon afterwards for England, in order to join the Second Battalion.

In addition to the names already given, Colour-sergeant W. Johnson, Corporal G. Wilde, and Privates M. Carney, G. Palmer, J. Turner, J. McNamara, J. Trainer and J. Hogan won the Distinguished Conduct Medal.

Lieutenant-Colonels L. S. Miller, P. Schlelter and O. D. C. Gratton were mentioned in dispatches, as also were Major T. G. P. Glynn, Captains W. S. Bannatyne, J. C. Stevenson, T. M. Jones, C. L. Parmiter,

---

### *Mentions in Despatches*

---

C. H. Harrington, W. R. Pinnell, F. R. Ewart, G. A. Howard Vesi, A. C. Lewin and G. A. Wilkinson, Lieutenant D. J. Watt and Lieutenant or Quartermaster B. J. Finch.

The non-commissioned officers or men who were mentioned in despatches were Colour-sergeants H. G. Clarke, A. Lees and W. Johnson, Sergeants T. Knight, R. Hargreaves and G. Wilde, Privates A. Hew, G. Palmer, J. Turner, A. Stevenson, P. McManns, J. Griffiths, J. Farrel, M. Carney, Roberts, J. Trainor, J. McNamara, W. Deaton, J. McGuire, P. Troy, Little, Hogan and Bradshaw.



---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER XII

#### THE WORK OF THE SECOND BATTALION, 1858-1915

Formation of the Second Battalion—India—Afghan Campaign—Battle of Peiwar Kotal—Campaign in Burma—Fighting in the Euphrates Valley.

DURING the Indian Mutiny, when the public was greatly alarmed, and even the War Office began to realise to what a serious pass negligence and a narrow cheeseparating policy had brought the British army, a 2nd Battalion of the King's Liverpool was formed. It was the third and happily the most successful effort. It numbered thirty-two officers and 695 men, with Colonel T. Maitland Wilson in command. It sailed for Gibraltar on September 25, 1858, and it was stationed there until April 1863, when it proceeded to Malta, remaining there five years. On landing at Portsmouth in 1868 it had a muster of 726 men, but its numbers varied greatly during the following decade. When the Martini rifles were served out it was stationed at the Curragh. During the five months spent in England it was reviewed in Windsor Park by Queen Victoria on July 10, 1877, after which it embarked for Bombay on September 23, and in November was selected to form part of Lord Roberts' force on the outbreak of the second Afghan War. Proceeding to Camp Mundra near Rawal Pindi, it met the 1st

---

## *Battle of Peiwar Kotal*

---

Battalion; but the union was a short one, for while the senior battalion proceeded to Bombay en route for England, the junior accompanied Lord Roberts' force to the Afghan frontier, and on December 2 took part in the battle of Peiwar Kotal.

The army deputed to invade Afghanistan was divided into three columns. The route selected was difficult, for it included the passage of Peiwar Kotal, a pass carrying the road to Cabul over a mountain range 9400 feet high. As time was of supreme importance the men marched lightly, and clad in the summer garb of the plains suffered severely from the intense cold. On reaching the foot of the pass the British commander halted a couple of days in order to give the troops a rest, and to make a reconnaissance of the enemy's position.

In describing the difficulties of the position, Lord Roberts' tells us in his *Forty-one Years in India* that the Afghans to the number of many thousands were stationed "on the summit of a mountain rising abruptly 2000 feet above us, and only approached by a narrow, steep and rugged path, flanked on either side by precipitous spurs jutting out like huge bastions, from which an overwhelming fire could be brought to bear on the assailants."

Having ascertained that it was possible, by taking a circuitous route through the dense forests of Indian cedars covering the lower range of hills, to attack the enemy in the rear, a force consisting of two batteries with the Seventy-Second Highlanders and four native regiments, mustering all told 2263 men, was assembled at ten o'clock on the night of December 1, and proceeded to make a wide turning movement. The destination was only known to four men, for nearly

---

## *Afghan War, 1877*

---

all the camp-followers were spies, and considerable doubt existed as to the loyalty of the Pathans.

While this small column, led by Roberts himself, was laboriously toiling along boulder-strewn gorges, across mountain streams, up densely wooded slopes and small snowclad plateaus, amid a darkness so profound that Sir Frederick was frequently in doubt as to his position, the King's Regiment, the Twelfth Bengal Cavalry and the Fifth Punjab Infantry with five guns, mustering altogether 1000 men, made such a strong and apparently genuine frontal attack as to convince the enemy that they were dealing with the entire British force.

As the first rays of the rising sun tinged the mountain crests, the turning column began to ascend the wooded slopes on the crest of which the Afghan army was stationed. A rattling discharge of musketry, several well-directed shrapnel shells, and ringing cheers from the Highlanders and Ghurkhas, were the first intimation to the mountaineers that the hated Ferin-ghees were in their midst. Consternation magnified the assailants into legions, and in a few minutes thousands of fierce, bearded, truculent warriors broke and fled, leaving some hundreds of dead and wounded behind. Presently the sound of hearty cheering re-echoing amidst the hills, and the sight of the British ensign waving from the summit of the Pass told the men below that the victory had been won.

Considering the traditional valour of the Afghans, who were in overwhelming numbers, nearly all armed with modern weapons, and occupying a well-nigh impregnable position, and remembering the difficulties of the assailants' night march in an unknown mountain region, the casualties of the British Expeditionary

---

## *Battle of Peiwar Kotal*

---

Force were amazingly small. The road was now practically clear to Cabul, and although there was some desultory fighting, the enemy carefully avoided another trial of strength.

As Peiwar Kotal was the first occasion in which the 2nd Battalion of the King's Liverpool had been under fire, the appended quotation from an article in the *Lahore Civil and Military Gazette*, describing the bearing of the corps, is of special interest—

"The reputation of our young soldiers was bravely sustained by the King's at the battle of the Peiwar; the average age of the men is about twenty-two, but on this day, in resolute courage, in cheerful endurance and contempt of fatigue, they nobly sustained the reputation of the British army. I saw them in the evening after a day of toil and combat in skirmishing order, advancing with cheery, reckless enthusiasm, but at the same time with as much regularity, order and precision as if they had been on parade; indeed, one of their officers said to me, 'The men moved better than ever they did on a field day.' . . . The cold that night on the Peiwar was intense; although I had three blankets over me, the spoils of the enemy, I could not get warm."

That night the King's and the rest of the army bivouacked unsheltered amid these inhospitable peaks. The work of constructing wooden huts during the next few days was constantly interrupted by large bodies of tribesmen, who were held in check by repeated volleys and occasional bayonet charges. For fully six weeks the men lived 8500 feet above the sea-level, with snow five feet deep and the temperature occasionally six degrees below zero. Food and clothing only reached them at irregular intervals, for the Army Service Corps of that period was not the splendid and regular service it is to-day. Early in February, however, half the battalion, under Major George Cochrane, after sending detachments to several out-

---

## *With the Kuram Field Force*

---

lying districts, concentrated at Kohat; where, on March 24, they were inspected by General Sir Paul Frederick Haines, G.C.B. The Commander-in-Chief addressed them in the following terms—

“Soldiers of the King’s Regiment—Now that I have seen the ground you have come over and taken, I think you have done wonders, and that you have performed deeds that any men should be proud of. . . . The two happiest years of my life were spent in command of the First Battalion of the King’s Regiment, and I look upon you as its brother; consequently I feel that all my sympathies must now be with the Second Battalion of the King’s.”

When the treacherous massacre of the British Resident took place at Cabul on September 3, 1879, the 2nd Battalion was one of the earliest selected for the Kuram Field Force, and soon afterwards the greater part of it proceeded to the camp at Ali Khel, the headquarters of Major-General Gordon. Early in the morning of October 14, several thousand fanatical mountaineers attempted to rush the camp, but a barricade erected by one of the native corps stopped their progress, and when the Twenty-Ninth Indian Regiment charged with the bayonet they broke and fled. In the meanwhile another strong body attempted to rush the quarters of the King’s Liverpool, but on being assailed from the sides, pounded with shot and shell, and finally furiously assailed by the native cavalry, they too fled to the shelter of the hills.

During these twenty-three months’ service beginning November 21, 1878, fifty-one men died and eighteen officers and 245 men were either invalided or transferred. The battalion remained in India until November 3, 1885, when it embarked for Burma. During these eight years in India it had seen some severe service, secured the honour of affixing the



**THE REGIMENTAL MEMORIAL FOR AFGHANISTAN, BURMAH,  
AND SOUTH AFRICA, 1878-1902.  
ST. GEORGE'S HALL, LIVERPOOL.**



---

## *The Burmese Campaign*

---

words "Peiwar Kotal" to the colours of the regiment, and had been granted with the 1st Battalion the privilege of adding the badge of the Rose of Lancaster to its facings.

The Burmese campaign was not one of marked distinction, but it called for great courage and endurance as well as extreme watchfulness. Soon after landing the battalion took part in the capture of Myngyan, and two of its companies, A and F, were selected to escort the captive King Thebaw from Mandalay to Madras. When dacoit warfare became general, the King's was broken up into detachments and sent to different parts of the country. One of the largest, under the command of Colonel Le Mesurier, marched a hundred miles, from Myngyan to Yenethen, through a densely wooded hostile country never before traversed by white soldiers. The campaign was another illustration of that irregular warfare wherein the best troops may lose more men than in an important campaign. During the close of 1885 and the whole of 1886 the battalion had twelve officers and 256 men killed, wounded and invalided, out of a muster of 717 which had landed at Rangoon. This large percentage is eloquent of midnight attacks, of silent assassinations, poisoned daggers, shots from the dense jungle, treacheries of every kind, and the undying and venomous hatred of a fanatical population. Before its degradation by the Germans war had its peaceful interludes and pauses during which men could breathe and be at ease. But such a campaign as that waged in Burma required eternal watchfulness and everlasting doubt. Men's nerves are ever on the rack, while the sinister surroundings might well instil fear into the bravest hearts. The battalion certainly



---

### *Addition to the Colours*

---

deserved the honour of having "Burma, 1885-87" inscribed on the flag of the regiment.

Even when the battalion left this land of forests, temples, treacheries and mysteries it was not to return to England, for another five years were spent in India and one at Aden before their faces turned towards that home for which they had so ardently longed during their fourteen years of exile.

Even when it did arrive the battalion had no opportunity to foregather at Liverpool, the city with which the regiment is so closely identified, for it proceeded to Manchester, and was afterwards quartered at Colchester, Aldershot, Belfast, Enniskillen, Londonderry, the Curragh, Limerick and Farnborough. It took no direct part in the South African War, but supplied drafts totalling 682 officers and men to the 1st Battalion.

Later it proceeded to India, and was stationed there in August 1914 when the Great War broke out. It formed part of the Indian Expeditionary Force to the Persian Gulf, and took an active part in the fighting at Busra and in the Euphrates Valley.

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER XIII

#### FROM MONS TO THE MARNE: FIRST BATTALION

Magnitude of the War—Landing of the B.E.F.—The King's Liverpools at the Battle of Mons—The Retreat from Mons—The Battle of the Marne.

COMPARED with the twenty-one millions of men under arms in Europe in the winter of 1915 the armies of the past were little indeed. The legions of Rome were comparatively small, but splendidly organised, well disciplined and admirably led. The army wherewith Attila, the Scourge of God, ravaged Europe never exceeded 340,000. Tamerlane, the great mystic conqueror of the East, had 750,000. Jenghiz Khan, who imposed the Moghul yoke on China, crushed the Turks, and swept over Russia in the thirteenth century, could only at the best muster an army 1,000,000 strong; indeed, it is doubtful if the total organised fighting forces of his day reached 2,000,000. Napoleon's army for the invasion of Moscow in 1812 totalled 680,000. The German army during the Franco-Prussian War was 900,000, and that of France 700,000. Even at the battle of Mukden the combined forces of the Russians and Japanese only reached 1,000,000.

Everything pertaining to this war is on so vast a scale that it is difficult to get a true perspective.

---

## *A War of Numbers*

---

Regiments have expanded into divisions, and divisions can now be counted by the hundred. There are, for instance, as many men in the twenty-five battalions of the King's (Liverpool Regiment) as there were British at the battle of Waterloo or the battle of Fontenoy, and three times as many as were present at the battles of Agincourt or Inkerman. Sir John Moore won the battle of Corunna with 15,000 British; Beresford that of Albuera with 6000. Clive won at Plassey with 1000 English and 2000 Sepoys—a small force, indeed, wherewith to lay the foundations of our Indian Empire. Marlborough won the battle of Blenheim with 20,000 British, and Wellington drove Soult out of Portugal with a similar number. During the battle of, and retreat from, Mons with the subsequent battles of the Marne and the Aisne, the casualties of the British Expeditionary Force were nearly 36,000, or equal to the number of killed, wounded and prisoners which Wellington computed that he had lost during the Peninsular War.

Of the twenty-five battalions of the King's Liverpools, sixteen were on Active Service at the close of 1915. Certain other battalions retained at home have the important duty of furnishing drafts for the battalions at the front. The 2nd Battalion was stationed in India, and while a portion of it was engaged during the spring of 1915 in repelling a serious raid of the frontier tribes, another was attached to the 2nd Battalion of the Dorset Regiment and has taken part in the Persian Gulf Campaign. Many other battalions are in France and Flanders, and the 8th Australian Infantry Regiment, the affiliated Colonial unit, served at Gallipoli.

When war was declared by Great Britain on

---

## *The Battle of Mons*

---

August 4, 1914, the 1st Battalion was stationed at Aldershot with Lieut.-Colonel W. S. Bannatyne in command. When the British Expeditionary Force went to France, it was attached to the 6th Brigade under General Davies and formed part of the 2nd Division.

Six days after landing in France the British troops came to grips with the Germans. Arriving in Mons on Saturday, August 22, they had little time to rest or prepare food before they were ordered to throw up earthworks, loophole the houses and build barricades in the streets. While engaged in this task they could see the Kaiser's hordes crossing the valley in massed formation preceded by heavy artillery, which played continuously on the town. There was little sleep on that eventful night. On Sunday the 23rd, the storm burst in all its fury. Huge guns vomited destruction on the ancient city; hundreds of machine guns kept up a constant stream of bullets, supplemented by rapid but ill-aimed platoon firing. Houses, workshops, churches, hospitals shook and quaked, and in many cases collapsed. Cities of old had been bombarded and destroyed, but none of them had ever experienced such a tornado of shot and shell. Yet the German infantry made little headway against the steadfast British although they were four to one, and it was not until the town had been practically destroyed by the heavy guns that our men fell back. Meanwhile they had meted out the severest punishment to the advancing foe.

At the battle of Mons the King's Liverpools acted as advanced guard to the 6th Brigade, and were one of the first infantry units to come in contact with the flood of grey-coated Germans. With the insolence

---

## *A Battle Picture*

---

of numbers the latter advanced in close formation, assured that they would walk over the scattered lines of khaki. But they suffered a rude awakening. Firing at random, their bullets passed over the British soldiers as the latter lay on the ground and took careful aim. Row after row of the enemy fell, until their progress was hindered by the dead and dying.

During the fateful days from August 23 to 26 the casualties of the British totalled nearly 7000. The French lost from 25,000 to 30,000, and the Germans 80,000. A good proportion of the latter were inflicted by the "contemptible little army." In the vivid pen pictures indited by men who wrote with the force and eloquence of red-hot experience, we get a glimpse of the opening act. Private P. Case of the King's Liverpools, for instance, tells us—

"We killed a tremendous number of them, and owing to their massed formation they were practically standing up dead before us. This just suited us, to be plugging at them, although they had nothing to do but take the lot of us, but they were surprised to find they could not do so. The Germans shot promiscuously, believing that their shot must hit some one. They had not the same chance of hitting us and rarely attempted to pick out their man before they shot. I should think in three days I fired between five and six hundred rounds of ammunition, and we did not waste any; every shot was meant for some one."

The more we learn about the battle and retreat from Mons the more does it redound to the credit of the British Army. Rushed hurriedly to the front to engage in the fiercest of encounters, it would, if the plans of General Joffre had been effectually carried out by one of his principal subordinates, have played an important part in turning the German right, and in winning a victory which would have sensibly shortened the war. If the French had held both

---

## *The Retreat from Mons*

---

banks of the Sambre and the Meuse, in addition to holding Charleroi with a formidable body of troops, the armies of Von Kluck and Von Buelow would have been in a cleft stick. With the aid of the British and the Belgians General Joffre would have been able to inflict a paralysing defeat on the Germans. But neither river was held and the enemy crossed them.

Sir John French ordered the retreat, lest he should be hemmed in against Maubeuge, a few miles from Mons, by Von Kluck and Von Buelow. The latter were approaching in great force from two sides, hoping to enclose the British force in the trap into which the Germans had intended to entice the greater part of the French Army. We can imagine the amazement and disappointment of the rank and file in being ordered to fall back at the moment when they were doing well on their own front. But obedience is the soldier's first rule. A French correspondent of a Paris newspaper who witnessed the onrush of Germans wrote of the advance as extending

"over a line of nearly 100 miles, spreading out in a formidable fan-like movement, preceded by a swarm of scouts in every direction which sweeps over the country from Brussels to Arlon. The German myriads are on the march over five different roads towards France. But brave men are there to meet them."

The notorious Uhlans were everywhere—killing the terrified villagers, looting, despatching the wounded, burning villages, desecrating churches, cutting off stragglers, and generally acting up to the gospel of frightfulness.

The British were saved by their dauntless courage, steadiness, discipline and unsurpassed marksmanship. The Germans hung closely on their heels during the

---

## *Arrival at the Marne*

---

day and followed their movements every night by powerful searchlights, which enabled their artillery to pound the khaki lines unceasingly. While the massed infantry assailed them in the proportion of four to one, the Kaiser's yawning pincers were so severely punished that they could not close, and the "contemptible little army," wearied but unbroken, marching day and night from August 24 to September 5, came at last to the banks of the Marne. Here they turned like a lion at bay, and, in conjunction with their French Allies, checked the onrush of the Germans and thereby altered the entire course of the campaign.

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER XIV

#### ON THE AISNE: FIRST BATTALION

The Retreat of the German Right Wing—The Battle of the Aisne—How the Germans lost the Initiative—Honours Won—The Modest Soldier.

WHEN the Allied Armies turned and forced the Germans back over the Marne and the Ourcq, the enemy got the first of many surprises in store for them.

As a result of the fierce engagement between the invaders and the British with the 5th French Army Corps on Sunday, September 6, when the Allies carried several villages at the point of the bayonet, they made a general advance. On the 7th, 8th and 9th severe fighting continued. Many villages were taken, and guns and prisoners captured. On the 10th, the pursuers took 1500 prisoners, 4 guns, several machine guns, and 50 transport wagons. So fierce had been the fighting and so active was the British pursuit, that some thousands of Germans who had been severed from their units betook themselves to the thick woods, and continued the fight there. In their rage and disappointment the retreating enemy committed senseless outrages on the inoffensive inhabitants, whose houses and treasures were wantonly destroyed. How keenly the good-natured British soldiers resented all this and how their natural indignation gathered force may be gleaned from a letter which Sergeant Walker



---

## *The Battle of the Aisne*

---

of the 1st Battalion of the King's (Liverpool Regiment) wrote—

"One of the worst features of the war has been to witness the plight of the refugees in the stricken countries. I have seen many a strong man in our ranks with tears in his eyes when we have passed poor women and children flying from their homes, their only food being that which our soldiers gave them. Every village through which the Germans had passed in their retreat was practically blown to pieces. It was also tragic to see thousands of acres of corn and vines rotting with no one to gather them in."

As the King's Liverpools formed part of the 1st Army Corps under the command of Sir Douglas Haig they naturally came in for a great share of the fighting. Speaking of the movements of the British Force on September 8 Sir John French in his first dispatch says—

"The 1st Army Corps encountered stubborn resistance at La Tretoire (north of Rebais). The enemy occupied a strong position with infantry and guns on the northern banks of the Petit Morin river; they were dislodged with considerable loss. Several machine guns and many prisoners were captured and upward of 200 German dead were left on the ground."

Again—

"Later in the day a counter-attack by the enemy was well repulsed by the 1st Army Corps, a great many prisoners and some guns again falling into our hands."

As the River Aisne offered many admirable advantages for defence the Germans resolved to make a stand there. According to Sir John French in his dispatch of October 8—

"The Aisne Valley generally runs east and west, and consists of a flat-bottomed depression of width from half a mile to two miles, down which the river follows a winding course to the west, at some points near the southern slopes of the valley and at others near the northern. The high ground both on the north and south of the river is approximately

---

## *Historical Parallels*

---

400 feet above the bottom of the valley and is very similar in character, as are both slopes of the valley itself, which are broken into numerous spurs and re-entrants. The most prominent of the former are the Chivre spur on the right bank and Sermoise spur on the left. Near the latter place the general plateau on the south is divided by a subsidiary valley of much the same character, down which the small river Vesle flows to the main stream near Sermoise. The slopes of the plateau overlooking the Aisne on the north and south are of varying steepness and are covered with numerous patches of wood, which also stretch upwards and backwards over the edge on to the top of the high ground. There are several villages and small towns dotted about in the valley itself and along its sides, the chief of which is the town of Soissons."

The position was, as Sir John French observed, "a very strong one either for delaying action or for defensive battle." It was infinitely superior to that held by the French at Blenheim, Malplaquet or Fontenoy, and closely resembled that occupied by the Prussians at the battle of Jena. In the hands of Napoleon, Wellington or Osman Pasha it would have been unassailable. The fact, however, that the Germans had an overwhelming superiority in men and guns, that their leaders had plenty of dash and enterprise, and that their troops were brave and devoted, compels the onlooker to seek elsewhere for the causes of their weakness and indecision. They were two: the imperative necessity of prolonging their left wing towards the coast to prevent the outflanking movement of the Allies, and the fact that the armies of the Crown Prince and of the Duke of Wurtemberg had been severely mauled by the French. These causes produced a weakening and demoralising effect only counteracted by a resort to trench warfare.

On the morning of October 12 the 1st British Army Corps, supported by a strong body of cavalry, advanced to the deep and sluggish Aisne under the enemy's

---

## *The Passage of the Aisne*

---

fire. In a short time the eleven bridges spanning the stream were demolished by the enemy's guns. Happily, the King's Liverpool and the battalions brigaded with it found a method of crossing by means of a strong aqueduct which carried the canal across the river, and by the morning of the 12th they were firmly established on the northern bank. The enemy kept up a heavy and destructive fire from the high ground dominating the Chivres Valley, but this did not prevent the British throwing eight pontoon bridges, as well as a small footbridge, across the river during the nights of the 13th and 14th, and early on the 15th fully one-half of the Expeditionary Force had firmly established itself at Missy, opposite the village of Conde, and at Moulins.

It must, however, be admitted that the full force of the Germans had not been employed in opposing the passage of the Aisne. They had been otherwise engaged. Having taken the alarm and finding unexpected French reserves on the British left, they were obviously uncertain as to the strength of the armies which might be hurled against them. Von Kluck and Von Buelow began feverishly to throw up strong entrenched lines a couple of miles to the north of the Aisne—a proceeding which would have been greeted with contemptuous derision had it been suggested to the German General Staff a month before.

The fact that the Germans should be compelled to resort to paralleled warfare instead of their traditional smashing offensive was one of the most startling revelations of modern history. Nothing, indeed, more strongly illustrates their complete loss of the initiative than the facts that they could at any time between August 26 and September 4 have occupied Calais,

---

## *With the First Army Corps*

---

Boulogne and Havre with little difficulty. It was not, in fact, until ten weeks later that the Kaiser's order to take Calais or die led to the wanton sacrifice of myriads of devoted soldiers which is without parallel in civilised history.

Prior, however, to settling down to that long and exhausting burrowing warfare which the Germans had decreed, the King's Liverpools, as part of the 1st Army Corps, took part in some severe fighting. The enemy disputed every inch of the ground. We have a glimpse of the ordeal through which they passed in the dispatch of Sir John French where he says—

"I cannot speak too highly of the valuable service by Sir Douglas Haig and the Army Corps under his command. Day after day and night after night the enemy's infantry has been hurled against him in violent counter-attacks, which has never on any one occasion succeeded, while the trenches all over his position have been under continuous heavy artillery fire."

In his first dispatch, dated September 7, 1914, Sir John French mentioned the following officers and men of the 1st Battalion of the King's (Liverpool Regiment): Lieut.-Colonel W. S. Bannatyne, Captain J. H. S. Batten, Captain and Adjutant Hudson, Lieutenant D. G. H. H. Scott Tucker, Company Sergeant-Major M. Swanick, Sergeant-Major T. H. Caddy, Sergeant N. Fitznolan, Lance-Corporal J. Blackburn.

In Sir John French's second dispatch, dated November 20, 1914, Corporal J. Jones is also mentioned.

During the battle of the Aisne an incident took place which greatly redounds to the credit of the King's Liverpools and well illustrates the spirit animating the British Army. The enemy had brought up an overwhelming number of big guns and speedily put the British artillery out of action. There was

---

## *Liverpools Save the Guns*

---

the greatest danger that many of the guns would be captured. Prompt action could alone save them. The Brigadier-General called for volunteers and the entire Liverpool battalion, fully 1000 strong, volunteered to a man. They all knew that they would have to cross an open space, half a mile wide, which was swept by the enemy's fire. While 800 men boldly charged the Germans with the bayonet, cheering the while, the remaining 200 brought the British guns back to our lines. It illustrated once again that in war audacity is often the best policy. This apparently foolhardy enterprise so took the enemy by surprise that comparatively few of the King's Liverpools were killed or wounded.

But the stories of individual and collective heroism during the amazing four days' battle of the Aisne are legion. Coming as they do from the lips of men who took an active part in them they give us realistic pictures of the fighting, which are far more valuable than official records. The story told by Sergeant Davies of the 1st Battalion is worth retelling—

“ I was in the trenches at the Battle of the Aisne for eight days, and we were under heavy shell fire the whole time, losing a very large number of men and also the best part of our leading officers. They had shot my platoon officer, so, being the senior sergeant, I had to take command of a platoon, which is, roughly, about sixty men. About half an hour after my officer had got knocked over, I got a job to do. There were some Germans in a wood and they had been firing at us all night. At 5.30 in the morning we spotted them about 150 yards away, and didn't we pelt them with our rifles and machine guns ! They were dropping down like sheep. When they got back in this wood, which was about 100 yards farther on, they shouted a word which in English means 'surrender,' and also they were showing white flags. So our captain shouted to our men to stop firing, and when we stopped, our poor captain—a jolly good chap, too—got shot, and died from his wounds. My company commander said

---

## *Words of Eye-Witnesses*

---

to me : ' Sergeant Davies, I want you to go out to that wood with your platoon and see if you can get hold of the Germans.' I advanced on with my men, all gay and hearty, and still they were showing the white flag and not firing a round, so we walked straight to the edge of the wood, of course. Being in command, I walked in front of my men, which was my duty. As soon as ever I got to the wood—I suppose I was about ten yards in front of my men—they saw my stripes. They knew I was in command, and so they shot me down. I got up and shouted to my men to retire back to that bank, and I got myself away with just one wound, but I believe there were seven men killed and wounded out of my sixty before they could get back."

The British soldier has not only surprised and delighted the people by his cheerfulness and unfailing good nature. He has in addition demonstrated the possession of those high moral qualities which are the attribute of the ideal soldier. We all take a pride in the sublime heroism and self-denial of Sir Philip Sidney when dying on the battlefield of Zutphen. The following letter, written by one of the non-commissioned officers of the King's Liverpools (one of the eight members of the 1st Battalion mentioned in the dispatch of Sir John French dated September 7, 1914), shows that the same spirit burns in the British soldier to-day. The letter says—

" I am glad to see so many of our boys recommended for rewards of various kinds and mentioned in despatches. What I fear is that one-tenth of the brave deeds done by men in the ordinary course of their duty will never be heard of. Many of the men themselves are so modest that they can't bear the publicity associated with it, and I had a man come to me with tears in his eyes to beg me not to tell any officers what he had done. He was lying in the trenches one day with a mug of milk that he had bought from a farm under fire when he noticed a wounded Dorset casting eyes at it. Though he was sorely in need of it himself he got up and said, ' You have it, old chap; I'll get another.' Out he raced under the terrible storm of shot and shell and came back again white as a sheet with another mug in his trembling hand. He had been hit badly in coming back."

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER XV

#### THE FIGHT FOR YPRES: FIRST BATTALION

Trench warfare—Barring the Road to Calais—The Battles of Neuve Chapelle, Festubert, Guinchy, and Hooze—The Blowing-up of Hill 60—Distinctions won.

AFTER the great move of the British force from the Aisne northwards, the 1st Battalion settled down to the dreary trench warfare. It played a conspicuous part in the occupation of Ypres and in repulsing the violent attack of the Germans on that town on November 1, 1914. That they suffered heavily goes without saying, in fact Captain Ryan was at that time the only unwounded officer of those who first went out with the Expeditionary Force. But the plodding and dangerous work of digging themselves in was illuminated by many a deed of heroism and quiet endurance, as subsequent Army orders showed.

Later in November, after the battalion had been on duty in the trenches near Ypres for an especially long time under the most dangerous and exacting conditions, they were visited by Sir John French, who addressed them in the following terms—

“ Officers, N.C.O.’s and men of the King’s Liverpool Regiment, it gives me great pleasure to be able to come here to-day to see you. I wish to tell you how deeply I sympathise with you all in the loss of your gallant colonel. He died like the fine soldier he was, at the head of the regiment for which he had

---

## *Sir John French's Praise*

---

done so much, leading you to success. You have lost a fine leader, and we have lost a very capable officer. His loss will be great. I have come to congratulate you on the work your regiment has done. You bear on your colours the names and records of battles in which your regiment has fought and distinguished itself. You have added to their list and have worthily upheld the traditions and fame of your regiment. It is not the first time you have fought under me. In the South African War your battalion was at Belfast with me. It has been due to the splendid determination and fighting qualities of you British soldiers that we have been able to maintain our line against great odds. You have suffered great hardships and losses cheerfully; you have never failed to keep your line. I congratulate you all on the fine performance of your regiment."

Sir John's reference was to the Lieut.-Colonel W. S. Bannatyne, who fell while nobly leading his men at Ypres. He belonged to a family which had been closely connected with the regiment for generations. Captain John Millar Bannatyne had greatly distinguished himself during the Indian Mutiny, and was mentioned six times in despatches. Lieut.-Colonel Bannatyne was the idol of his men, who would follow him anywhere.

At Neuve Chapelle on March 10 the 1st Battalion and some of the Territorial Battalions greatly distinguished themselves. Companies A and B, of the First, were selected to lead the assault. Unfortunately the barbed wire had not been completely cut, and only Sergeant-Major Jones and four men were left when the unbroken entanglements were reached. Although they attempted to hack the wire through with their bayonets it was in vain. After his four comrades had been shot down, the Sergeant-Major realised that the task was an impossible one, so he threw himself flat on the ground and awaited a favourable opportunity to return to the British lines. It took him, however, two hours and a half to crawl back again. Never did British



---

## *Neuve Chapelle and Hill 60*

---

officers more splendidly acquit themselves than those of the 1st Battalion on this tragic day. Colonel Carter was wounded in the shoulder, but he refused to retire. Captain Feneran was killed when leading his company, as were Lieutenants Madden, O'Donoghue, Webb and Young. Lieutenant Miller had several bullet-holes through his cap and a bullet in his knee. General Fanshaw, who commanded the Brigade on this occasion, complimented the regiment on its conduct and said that though their attack had been checked it still kept a number of Germans in front of them, and had consequently materially assisted the rest of the British Force to enter Neuve Chapelle.

The King's Liverpools also took a prominent part in the destruction of Hill 60, which was the key to some very important positions. The following letter not only shows what courage and resource were needed, but how varied were the occupations of the troops engaged in the enterprise. The letter is from one of the officers of the King's (Liverpool Regiment)—

" This hill, quite a small mound, was about 100 yards in front of our trenches. The engineers had mined the hill. When in the evening the first explosion took place you really cannot imagine the awfulness of it.<sup>1</sup> Well, as soon as the last explosion of the mines had taken place the other battalions were to rush up and hold the top of the hill, and as soon as they were up we, who were waiting in a trench alongside them, had to rush up with sandbags and spades to put the position in a state of defence. I was the leading man of our two companies, as my platoon was in the front, and as soon as the captain gave the word for us to go forward we went over the parapet of our trench like deer and right up the hill, the men following up splendidly, and as soon as we were up started filling sandbags and building a parapet. We had to work till midnight, when we were to be relieved by our other two companies. The men worked like heroes, and some of our chaps were singing as they filled the sandbags. It was a fine show altogether, and

---

<sup>1</sup> Six tons of dynamite were used.

---

## *Well-earned Honours*

---

we took over 100 prisoners. Of course the German guns soon began. What with theirs and ours the noise was tremendous. The sky was lit up with bursting shrapnel, etc. Most of our casualties occurred during the counter-attack, which didn't commence till after my company had been relieved. When we were relieved at midnight we went back to some dug-outs behind, but were called out at about six o'clock to some close support dug-outs, and I had to take my platoon into one of our old trenches, where I remained all day. The rest of the battalion got back to the huts during the afternoon, and two other battalions relieved us.

"At six p.m. these two battalions had to make another bayonet charge, so I came in for a second bombardment. The charge was quite successful, though, and we hold the hill now. General Smith-Dorrien, who has been down already to congratulate us, read a telegram to us from Sir John French letting us know of the importance of the position."

The deeds of heroism were legion during the long months of trench warfare. Constantly waist-deep in water, a prey to the lynx-eyed sniper, who took advantage of every incautious movement, only able to leave their burrows for a welcome rest at long intervals, and unable to have anything save the most primitive fire, the regiment endured it all without complaint and with unflinching good humour.

The following officers of the 1st Battalion were appointed Companions of the Distinguished Service Order.

BAILEY, Major (temp. Lieut.-Col.) V. T.  
HUDSON, Major P.  
JONES, Major R. B.

The following officers were granted the Military Cross.

GOFF, Captain C. E.  
YATES, Captain C. M., M.V.O.  
FULTON, Lieutenant C. F. V.  
RYAN, Captain (since dead).

---

## *The First Battalion*

---

In the award of Distinguished Conduct Medals announced in February 1915, six went to the Liverpool 1st Battalion.

Lance-Corporal T. DAVIES. "For gallant conduct on October 28 in going into a house in front of our lines and doing excellent work for two days sniping the enemy in their trenches eighty yards away."

Corporal E. JONES. "For gallantry and ability on November 6, when he went out under shell fire in front of our position and succeeded in making a sketch of the German trenches resulting in the accurate direction of our guns on the enemy."

Private W. JONES. "For gallantry on October 25 in helping to carry into cover during an attack a severely wounded officer under a heavy fire."

Private C. H. MORGAN. "For conspicuous gallantry on October 26 and 27, when he remained in a house in front of our trenches harassing the enemy by sniping, being only 80 yards from their trenches."

Private C. PARSONS. "For gallantry on November 2 in going out in front of our lines under heavy fire to warn a detached post to withdraw from a burning farm."

Private A. SIMPSON. "For gallantry on October 25 in helping to carry into cover during an attack a severely wounded officer under heavy fire." Private Simpson was also granted the Russian Medal of St. George.

Others who won Distinguished Conduct Medals later in the year were—

Acting Colour-Sergeant-Major S. J. JONES. "For conspicuous gallantry during our attack at Givenchy on March 10, 1915, in endeavouring to cut the wires ten yards from the enemy's trenches, and for attempting to bring up more men after the first line had all been killed or wounded. Subsequently rendered great assistance in organising a second party for an assault later in the day."

Sergeant W. ASHWORTH. "For conspicuous gallantry on March 10, 1915, at Givenchy, and on many previous occasions during the campaign. As Battalion Headquarters Orderly, he has never failed to deliver messages, often under very heavy fire, and has given a fine example of courage and devotion to duty."

Acting Corporal A. N. SHORTHOUSE. "For conspicuous gallantry on March 10, 1915, at Givenchy, when he led his

---

## *A List of Honours*

---

- platoon with great determination after his officer had been shot. Although wounded, he attempted to cut the enemy's entanglements during the attack."
- Private D. BERRY.** "For great gallantry on May 16, 1915, near Rue du Bois, when he carried six badly wounded men back to the dressing station under very heavy shell fire. The company being in reserve, the stretcher-bearers were unable to get up, owing to heavy fire."
- Colour-Sergeant-Major A. LAVERY.** "For conspicuous gallantry and ability on May 16, 1915, at Richebourg. After his company officer had been shot he commanded the company in a very exposed and difficult situation with great skill and gallantry. He shot several Germans himself. His cheerfulness and bravery under very trying conditions set a splendid example to the men under his command."
- Sergeant A. SANDERS.** "For conspicuous gallantry on June 21, 1915, at Cuinchy. He entered a mine full of poison gas a second time (having failed in the first effort), and, after traversing the deadly fumes for a distance of 115 yards, he succeeded in rescuing four of his comrades."
- Corporal W. MITCHELL.** "For conspicuous gallantry on June 22, 1915, at Cuinchy, in entering a mine after an explosion had occurred and rescuing a sergeant who had a leg and an arm broken, and afterwards assisting in the rescue of five men. In affecting this rescue work great danger had to be faced from 'after-damp,' and also from the ruined condition of the mine consequent on the destruction of the limbering supports."
- Private F. DOOLAN.** "For conspicuous gallantry on September 25, 1915, at Cuinchy, when he advanced to the attack with his platoon up to the enemy's unbroken wire, and remained there, under a very heavy fire, until ordered to return to our trenches. Later he went out several times and brought in wounded men. On the last occasion he was accompanied by Private Ivory, 1st King's Royal Rifle Corps, whom he carried in, when very severely wounded. Private Doolan had previously displayed great coolness and bravery on May 17, at Festubert, in carrying messages under a very severe artillery, machine-gun, and rifle fire."
- Private J. C. EALOUGH.** "For conspicuous gallantry on May 17, 1915, at Rue de Bois. His company having to fall back, he made his way to a wounded corporal thirty yards away and brought him back, a distance of 400 yards under a very heavy machine-gun fire."
- Private F. DAY.** "When one of the patrol on October 5 got some considerable distance in front of his patrol, located an observation station of the enemy and also

---

## *The First Battalion*

---

four guns concealed in a wood. Air artillery were able to direct their fire on to the enemy guns." Company Sergeant-Major M. SWANWICK. "For conspicuous gallantry in conveying messages to his commanding officer under heavy fire although at the time badly wounded."

Sergeant-Major Caddy was the first member of the regiment to win the French Médaille Militaire.

The following were mentioned in Sir John French's dispatch of May 31, 1915, for having performed "distinguished service in the field"—

CARTER, Lieut.-Colonel B. C. M.  
CAINE, 11937 Private G. (died of wounds).  
DAWSON, 8585 Private T.  
DOYLE, 11459 Private S.  
UPTON, 10732 Drummer L.

The following were mentioned in Sir John French's final dispatch, November 30, 1915—

JONES, Major R. C. R., Adjutant, S.R.  
STEAVENSON, Brevet Lieut.-Colonel (temp. Brig.-Gen.) C. J.  
POTTER, Major (temp. Lt.-Col.) H. C.  
GOFF, Captain C. E.  
FLEMING, Captain N.  
HOPE, Lieutenant J. P., S.R.  
HUTCHISON, Lieutenant W. M., S.R.  
PHIPPS, Lieutenant C. J.  
FULTON, Second Lieutenant C. F. V.  
MCERVEL, Second Lieutenant J. H.  
ROBERTS, Lieutenant (temp. Capt.) F. J., S.R.  
LONERGAN, 8687 Lance-Sergeant J. (dead).  
CHAMBERS, 8787 Lance-Corporal J.  
DUDDLE, 26292 Private J.  
HANBY, 11276 Private H. L.  
HARRINGTON, 28035 Private H. (killed).  
ALLEN, Lieut.-Colonel J. W.  
BEALL, Major E. M., D.S.O.

The following Non-Commissioned Officers of the 1st Battalion were awarded the Distinguished Conduct Medal—



*Photo. : Topical Press Agency.*

THE KING'S LIVERPOOLS IN THE TRENCHES NEAR YPRES  
IN MAY, 1915.

"NOW, LADS, COLD STEEL!"

The Germans are seen advancing in the left of the picture.



---

## *A List of Honours*

---

Sergeant F. COOKE, 1st Battalion Liverpool Regiment. "For conspicuous gallantry and ability. Sergeant Cooke led his platoon to the attack, and when the preceding section lost its commander, took charge of both, reorganised the sections, and when further advance became impossible, ordered them to dig themselves in. The section remained in their position throughout the day, and at dusk he ordered a gradual retirement and himself brought in a wounded sergeant. His bravery and devotion to duty were most marked."

Corporal (acting Sergeant) T. FOLEY, 1st Battalion Liverpool Regiment. "For conspicuous gallantry. Seeing Captain Kerr, R.A.M.C., struggling in with a severely wounded man, he went over the parapet to his assistance; there was absolutely no cover from the enemy, who were firing from a commanding position barely seventy yards away."

Corporal C. J. HAYWARD, 1st Battalion Liverpool Regiment. "For conspicuous gallantry. After an attack on the enemy it was necessary to ascertain in what strength their lines were held. Corporal Hayward led a patrol in broad daylight, under heavy artillery, machine-gun and rifle fire, almost to the enemy's lines, and brought back valuable information."

Lance-Corporal G. TURRELL, 1st Battalion Liverpool Regiment. "For conspicuous gallantry. After an attack on the enemy it was necessary to ascertain in what strength their lines were held. Lance-Corporal Turrell led a patrol in broad daylight, under heavy artillery, machine-gun and rifle fire, almost to the enemy's lines, and brought back valuable information."

The Russian Cross of the Order of St. George has been conferred on Company Sergeant-Major Samuel John Jones.

The Russian Medal of St. George has been conferred on acting Sergeant Harry Edwards.

The regiment will always remember with especial pride the exploits of Lance-Corporal Joseph Tombs, who won the Victoria Cross near Rue du Bois, on June 16, 1915. On his own initiative he crawled out repeatedly under a very heavy shell and machine-gun fire, to bring in wounded men who were lying about 100 yards in front of our trenches. He rescued four



---

### *The First Battalion*

---

men, one of whom he dragged back by means of a rifle sling placed round his own neck and the man's body. This man was so severely wounded that unless he had been immediately attended to he must have died. The brave V.C. also had the Russian Cross of the Order of St. George conferred on him.

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER XVI

#### THE WORK OF THE SECOND, THIRD AND FOURTH BATTALIONS

A Tribal Raid on the North-West Frontier of India—The Persian Gulf Expedition—How the Third and Fourth Battalions have acquitted themselves in Flanders.

STATIONED at Peshawar on the outbreak of the war, the 2nd Battalion took an active part in repelling tribal attacks on the North-West Frontier. Early in April 1915 a force of 4000 tribesmen gathered at Shathader. Hoping to surprise the British camp, they furiously assailed the Eighth Rajputs and would probably have broken through but for the opportune arrival of several companies of the Liverpools. Owing to the broken and boulder-strewn nature of the rising ground it was impossible for cavalry to act, and the fight soon became a hand-to-hand affair, the fierce, fanatical hillmen relying on their traditional scimitar while the Liverpools used the bayonet. The tribesmen were in overwhelming numbers and constantly reinforced, but discipline and steadiness told, and the fanatics were driven back with such heavy losses as will, no doubt, check their predatory raids for a considerable time.

Greatly to the disappointment of the main body of the battalion, only a small detachment was selected to accompany the Persian Gulf Expedition. This

---

## *Mesopotamia*

---

company is not mentioned in the reports of the Tigris Valley fighting, but it has figured in the subsequent casualty lists. Attached to the First Dorsets and the First Oxford and Bucks Light Infantry, it has shared the amazing adventures and perils of probably the most sorely tried force in the wide theatre of war. Cast into the cradle of the race, surrounded by treacherous Arabs, surprised by the flooding of the Tigris, afflicted by the consuming heat of one of the hottest spots on earth, ever a prey to malaria and mosquitoes, tied to river banks infested with snipers, it is not surprising that this heroic force should sigh for the cool trenches of Belgium.

But it is not only in the physical features of the country that the fighting here differs so much from that waged elsewhere. The Turk is on his native heath. Little wonder that he has surprised the leaders of the British Expedition or that the King's, the Dorsets, the Oxfords and the other white units have found him the toughest fighter they have yet encountered, armed and led as he is by the Germans.

### SPECIAL RESERVE BATTALIONS

When the two Militia Battalions now known as the Third and Fourth were raised in 1797, they bore the title "The First Royal Lancashire Supplementary Militia," their effective strength being 14 officers and 780 rank and file. They experienced to the full the traditional uncertainty of the War Office when dealing with the Auxiliary Forces, for their numbers were increased to 1,337 in 1798, and then reduced to 33 officers and 694 men before the close of the year, and the title was again changed to "The 2nd Royal Lancashire Militia."



*From the "Illustrated London News."*

THE ADVANCE TOWARDS BAGDAD.

A BRITISH BOAT BRIDGE ACROSS THE TIGRIS.



---

## *Militia Battalions*

---

During the next half century the corps was on the point of being disbanded several times, but 1854 saw it embodied for service at Liverpool and afterwards stationed at Glasgow, whence it sent successive drafts totalling 500 men to the army fighting in the Crimea. During the next twenty years it met at Liverpool for its annual training, but in 1878 its headquarters were removed to Warrington. In 1881 it was incorporated in the old 8th, when it became the 3rd and 4th Battalions of the King's Liverpool Regiment. The two Militia units acted together until 1897. Although the 3rd sent out a small detachment to South Africa to join the 1st Battalion, it was not until December 1900 that the 3rd, consisting of 584 officers and men, embarked for the seat of war. Although only once in action it did useful work in guarding posts, protecting the lines of communication and in convoying ammunition, stores, etc. A detachment was engaged in the latter duty in the neighbourhood of Doornberg Fontein when it came in contact with a party of Boers, but on advancing and opening fire the enemy fell back and the convoy was not further molested.

Captain S. D. Norris and Sergeant W. Hayes were mentioned in dispatches.

As the senior battalion of the regiment in the Special Reserve the Third has furnished considerable drafts to the 1st Battalion during the present war. That these have well maintained the high reputation of the regiment, the following list of officers and men mentioned in dispatches will show—

BAKER, Lieutenant E. B. (killed).  
WEBB, Lieutenant H. M. T. (killed).  
YOUNG, Lieutenant P. M. (killed).

---

### *Third Battalion Honours*

---

EVANS, 11930 Sergeant A.  
CUFFLIN, 9034 Acting Corporal W.  
WAGSTAFF, 8948 Lance-Corporal G.  
BEECH, 9096 Private F. F.  
EASTWOOD, 11635 Private J.  
SMITH, 5872 Private T.  
WELSH, 6282 Private J.

The following officer, who has been twice wounded and is the son of a well-known northern journalist, was awarded the Military Cross, the entry in the Gazette of July 4, 1915, being—

Lieutenant W. M. HUTCHISON, 3rd Battalion Liverpool Regiment (attd. 1st), King's. "During the action on May 16, 1915, near Rue du Bois, at three p.m., in response to calls for ammunition, he led a party of men across the open under a very heavy machine-gun fire, and succeeded in getting through with most of his men. The last part of the journey had to be done on hands and knees. On May 18 he organised and conducted an attack, and led the bombing party, and by his work forced the surrender of 200 Germans and caused 200 more to retreat, leaving their arms and equipment."

The following extract records a well-earned D.C.M.

11022 Private T. DOSWELL, 3rd Battalion Liverpool Regiment (attd. 1st Bn.). "For great courage and resource near Cuinchy, on November 3, 1915. When on duty outside a mine, an officer came out of the mine, who was gassed, and said that another officer was lying unconscious inside. Private Doswell immediately went down the mine, followed by another man, who, however, turned back at the bottom of the ladder. Private Doswell went on about twenty yards to where he found the officer lying unconscious. Unaided, he dragged him back to the foot of the ladder and helped to carry him up. Afterwards he reported himself suffering from gas poisoning."

#### THE FOURTH BATTALION

In January 1902 the 4th Battalion was embodied, and embarked for Port Elizabeth on the 23rd, its

---

### *Fourth Battalion Honours*

---

total strength exceeding 800. Mafeking was reached on February 20. After occupying the forts and blockhouses for some time orders were received to construct blockhouses along the railway line from Mafeking to Lichtenberg, a distance of forty-three miles. When completed these were occupied and defended by the battalion until the close of the war.

The following officers and non-commissioned officers were mentioned in dispatches—

Captain H. B. de Tupper, Lieutenant A. Lindermere and Lieutenant G. E. H. Sheen; Sergeant-Major R. Burnet and Sergeant T. Hayes.

On proceeding to Belgium soon after the outbreak of the war in 1914, the 4th Battalion was attached to the Lahore Division, in whose company it soon had its full share of fighting, as the following letter from Private W. McDonough to his wife will demonstrate—

"We have just come out of the trenches after seven days and nights, looking like navvies and covered with mud. The Germans were only seventy yards away from us, and on April 2 they shouted to us, 'Are you downhearted? We are: don't fire and we will not.' The Highland Light Infantry were opening a tin of bully beef when a German came and looked over the trench and said, 'How many are there to that tin? Whack that among you.' He threw a hand bomb, but it did no harm."

The following is the list of some of the honours won by the battalion—

Major Edward Metcalfe Beale, 4th Battalion, won the D.S.O. for excellent work throughout the operations near Ypres from April 24 to May 4, 1915, and especially during the attack on April 27, when he was with the leading company in the first line. He returned to battalion headquarters for reinforcements and took them forward with him to the front



---

### *Fourth Battalion Honours*

---

line. He was also conspicuous in the attack on May 1.

The following N.C.O.'s and men were awarded Distinguished Conduct Medals—

9265 Private W. J. TUDOR. "For gallant conduct on May 22, 1915, at Ferme de Bois, when he rescued, in broad daylight, a wounded officer, and also a severely wounded man."

8695 Lance-Sergeant M. VINCENT. "For gallant conduct and ability on April 27 and May 1, 1915, when he commanded a platoon with marked resource. On the latter date he carried a severely wounded signaller, under a heavy fire, to a place of safety, and he has invariably showed great courage and devotion to duty."

8748 Private W. WINN. "For gallant conduct on May 22, 1915, at Ferme de Bois, when, in company with another man, he assisted to bring in a wounded officer, who was lying within 150 yards of the German trenches."

11462 Private W. ELMER. "For conspicuous gallantry on April 27, 1915, near Ypres, in attending to a wounded officer while under a heavy fire. On May 1, 1915, he volunteered to carry and successfully delivered several messages under a very heavy fire."

The following were awarded the Cross of the Order of St. George (3rd class) by the Emperor of Russia, "as a reward for gallantry and distinguished service in the field"—

EGAN, Private E.

STAFFORD, Private J.

In Sir John French's final dispatch, dated January 14, 1916, the following officer of this battalion was announced as having won the Military Cross—

SIMPSON, Captain E. H.

The following were also awarded the D.C.M.—

Private P. AMBROSE, 4th Battalion. "For conspicuous gallantry. Private Ambrose displayed great courage and endurance as a stretcher-bearer. On many occasions he volunteered to go out and carry in wounded men under very heavy shell fire."

---

### *Fourth Battalion Honours*

---

Corporal C. JONES, 4th Battalion. "For conspicuous gallantry in reconnoitring voluntarily, parts of the enemy's position. The reconnaissance was done in daylight and the information obtained very valuable."

Private J. STAFFORD, 4th Battalion. "For conspicuous bravery; he was wounded after volunteering for patrol and sniping duties. He also displayed great coolness and gallantry in carrying messages to and from the trenches when the telephone had been cut."

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER XVII

#### THE WORK OF THE TERRITORIAL BATTALIONS

The Famous Fifth—The Sixth or Liverpool Rifles—The Seventh, the Eighth or Liverpool Irish—The Ninth or Liverpool Press Guards—The Tenth or Liverpool Scottish.

WHEN the Volunteer movement started in 1859, Liverpool took it up with characteristic enthusiasm. A city of quick perceptions, sterling loyalty and unbounded patriotism, it soon raised more than its due proportion of the 120,000 Volunteers obtained in Great Britain in six weeks. Lancashire figures first in the official list of Volunteers, and Liverpool was, in fact, the first of the large cities to set the movement going. The Liverpool Drilling Club, instituted in 1853, was organised and equipped like the Volunteers as afterwards recognised, and practically the same officers controlled both. In referring to the question of seniority Sir Duncan MacDougal, formerly Under-Secretary for War, said, "I consider Captain Bousfield and his corps of Lancashire Rifles to have been the immediate cause of the late Government's having issued the circular authorising the formation of Volunteer Corps."

Captain Bousfield had the distinction of being the first officer commissioned (June 1859) to any Volunteer formation in 1859. He was appointed colonel of this premier battalion, and rendered such splendid service

---

## *The Volunteer Movement*

---

to the movement as to justify the reverence with which his name is regarded by the Liverpool Territorials. This battalion, originally called The First Lancashire Rifle Volunteers and later The First Volunteer Battalion The King's (Liverpool Regiment), became the 5th Battalion of the regiment on the re-organisation of the Territorial Forces in 1908.

Amongst the treasures owned by the 5th Battalion is a signed portrait of Garibaldi presented to it when the great patriot was in England in 1863. It bears the inscription: "A soldier of liberty to soldiers of liberty. G. Garibaldi." Colonel Chambers, with some officers of the corps, volunteered for service under the great Italian and took part in several battles.

The association of the Derby family with the 5th is one of the traditions of the Volunteer movement. In 1862 the Earl of Derby, the "Rupert of Debate," was appointed hon. colonel of the battalion. In 1870 his successor in the title was similarly appointed. In 1894 the late Lord Derby occupied the position, and was in 1908 succeeded by the present earl.

This battalion, like the other Volunteer units of the regiment, sent detachments to South Africa during the Boer War, where they took part in several engagements and acquitted themselves creditably.

On February 19, 1915, the 5th Battalion left Canterbury where it was in training, and proceeding overseas formed part of the Second Division. They were brigaded with the 1st Battalion, and took their place in the firing line and at Givenchy during the actions of Neuve Chapelle on March 10, 1915, Festubert in May 1915, and Loos September–October 1915.

A N.C.O. not connected with the battalion, when writing home said—

---

## *Territorials in France*

---

"I have met the Liverpool Territorials, and part of our battalion was sent to the trenches for instruction with them. The result is that to emulate their deeds here is the desire of our men. The division to which the Fifth and Seventh Liverpool Territorials were attached has long since earned the name of 'The Iron Division.' Nor has this name come lightly to it, for though it has been in practically every one of the big engagements here, their line has never been broken through. Working in conjunction with the Guards, the Fifth Liverpools fought at Neuve Chapelle, Festubert, La Bassée, Vermelles (a small town taken and retaken eleven times) and the Hohenzollern Redoubt. To mention just a few of the big actions, the Sixth Territorial Battalion took part in the horrible slaughter at Hill 60. The Eighth and Tenth Battalions charged with the best of them at Hooge, where the Eighth lost nearly half their men, and the Tenth figured in the bloody work at Loos. . . . I have mentioned the Territorials especially because they are not professional fighters, and are not expected to do as well as regular troops, but you can easily understand that those at the head of affairs take careful consideration as to which battalion they give the honour of working in conjunction directly with the Guards. That is what your Territorials have been doing."

Corporal A. Fenelon, C Company of the 5th Battalion, gives a stirring account of the splendid manner in which the Liverpools went into action in Flanders early in May 1915.

"Our artillery started to bombard the trenches with all kinds of ammunition imaginable—shrapnel, high explosives, and common shell. We were rushed up during the night to await daybreak for the attack, but after a lull of about two hours, it being then daylight, our artillery with some marvellous shooting absolutely demoralised the Germans. Their first lines advanced the 200 yards towards our trenches with white flags and hands up, and when we thought of our mates lying dead beside us it was all we could do to keep our fingers off our triggers, prisoners though they were. Some of our battalion then worked across on their flank and took their trenches. We stopped back as reserves. This was hell itself, because their artillery then shelled our trench. They had the range all right, and the constant cry in our trench was 'stretcher bearer right' or 'stretcher bearer left.' We lost many officers and the cream of our men. We held this position on Monday and all night, and there was a constant

---

## *Territorial Honours*

---

stream of dead and wounded. Out of the four N.C.O.'s promoted at Ramsgate I am the only one left. My three mates went under. The following morning we had to advance and support our first line across a field that was covered with dead and dying. Their observers followed us and directed all their shrapnel on that field, and many a Liverpool home was put in mourning. We gained the original German trenches, and we had to throw their dead bodies over the back of the trench to make room to move. Souvenirs were to be had in hundreds, but the men did not think of them. Many of them dropped on their knees and thanked God that they got through that infernal shrapnel uninjured. Later that day we came down the trench to go back over that field for ammunition. It was a volunteer job, and I and the remainder of my section got the job. We did not get a quarter of the way across before the German Maxims on our flank opened fire on us. We got across except that 'your humble' got one in the knee which put me out of that engagement. Every man deserves mention for that day, but, as our skipper says, he could not pick them out. You will no doubt read of the taking of those three lines of trenches, but you cannot realise what it cost."

Amongst the officers of the 5th who have been decorated for services in the field are—

Lieut.-Colonel and Hon. Colonel John Maxwell McMaster, V.D., commanding, who has had the Order of St. Michael and St. George conferred upon him by the King.

The following N.C.O.'s and men of the 5th Battalion have won the Distinguished Conduct Medal—

Sergeant H. R. ROBERTSON. "For conspicuous gallantry on the morning of March 23, 1915, at Cuinchy, when he crawled out of his trench under heavy fire with another soldier to assist a severely wounded man. He succeeded in returning, but whilst so doing the wounded man was again twice hit, and died while being lifted into the trench."

Sergeant J. MCGUIRE. "For conspicuous gallantry on the morning of March 23, 1915, at Cuinchy, when he crawled out of his trench, with another soldier, under a heavy fire, to assist a severely wounded man. He succeeded in returning, but whilst doing so the wounded man was

---

## *Fifth and Sixth Battalions*

---

again twice hit, and died while being lifted into the trench."

Lance-Sergeant E. COONEY. "For conspicuous gallantry on May 16, 1915, at Festubert. After taking part in the assault on the enemy's trenches, he went out repeatedly in daylight and full view of the enemy, and, with assistance, brought in several wounded men. These men were being fired on from the German trenches, and would probably have been killed if it had not been for the bravery and devotion of Sergeant Cooney and the men who assisted him."

In addition to the above Captain W. L. Evans and Sergeant Benbow were mentioned in dispatches.

Major-General H. S. Horne, C.B., commanding the Second Division, wrote of the 5th Battalion's services in the War, that "the excellent spirit which inspires all ranks of the 5th Liverpool Regiment has made light of all difficulties and enabled them to take their place alongside the famous battalions of the 11th Infantry Brigade. I have felt perfect confidence that the 5th Liverpool would answer any call I made upon them."

### THE SIXTH BATTALION

As already noted, the *6th Battalion* was formed towards the close of 1859, or only two days after the 5th had been launched. Although nearly all the citizens who took an active part in the creation of these early corps are dead, it is pleasant to know that Mr. Robert Gladstone, who did so much to bring the 6th into being, still takes an active interest in the battalion with which his name is so closely identified. In the early days it was known as the 15th Rifle Volunteers, and, being a corps of crack marksmen, it has carried off many prizes at Bisley.

The 6th has greatly distinguished itself at the front, where it has fought alongside the 1st Battalion.

---

## *Battle of Festubert*

---

This was especially the case at the battle of Festubert, early in May 1915, where it was held in reserve during the opening phases of the conflict. On the 10th the Germans advanced in strong force and were only held in check with great difficulty.

As the night approached the King's received orders to fall in, and they silently marched to the first line trenches. One of the officers of the 6th who took part in the battle says—

"Soon after ten o'clock there were four lines of men lying in the open in front of the breastwork, with more behind waiting to support. At 11.30, in darkness where a man could not see ten yards ahead of him, they rose with one accord to the attack. They moved in silence at a walk, but almost at once flares rose from the enemy's trenches, and the troops were swept with a rain of bullets as they broke into a charge. The King's made good the first and second line of enemy trenches, and at dawn five or six hundred yards of the first two lines were held by our men. Lieutenant Hutchinson, when ammunition ran short, led a party across the open under heavy machine-gun fire and got through with most of his men, though the last part of the journey had to be done on hands and knees (two days later he led a bombing party which took two hundred prisoners and routed two hundred more). Many a man of the King's, shouldering bandoliers of ammunition and carrying boxes of bombs, dashed across the open, bullet-swept zone, and many fell, unrecognised heroes, who knew the risk and did their share for the honour of their country and the old regiment. Among many gallant rescuers of the fallen must be especially mentioned Lance-Corporal Tombs, who brought in five wounded men from the open, crawling on his hands and knees as he dragged each man safely to cover. In the Divisional Commander's words, the King's behaved in a consistently gallant manner. 'I do not think,' he told them, 'any battalion of the brigade has done better than you. The task of breaking the enemy's trenches in which you took part, supporting the attack and carrying up ammunition, was very well carried out. After that you carried out magnificent work with bombs and bayonet, which culminated in the surrender of 200 German prisoners to you. I am certain that whenever the brigade is called upon to do any hard work, the King's will be the backbone, and will see carried through whatever is asked of them.'"



---

## *Seventh Battalion*

---

The following N.C.O.'s and men of the 6th obtained the D.C.M. and other decorations—

Private T. PHILLIPS. "For gallant conduct at Zillebeke on March 30, 1915, in rescuing wounded comrades under heavy rifle and shell fire."

Private W. C. BROSTER. "For gallant conduct at Zillebeke on March 30, 1915, in rescuing wounded comrades under heavy rifle and shell fire."

Private C. L. WILSON. "For conspicuous gallantry. Private Wilson was with a patrol under an officer and was one of the points of the advanced guard, when he located an enemy ambush at close quarters. He gave no sign that he had seen anything, but informed the officer, thereby enabling him to make his dispositions at leisure and to inflict severe loss on the enemy. His coolness and presence of mind undoubtedly saved our patrol from being ambushed."

Private G. L. DAVIES. "For conspicuous gallantry and ability. In some woods he formed a party of nine men under an officer, who were fired on by a strong enemy ambush. The officer and non-commissioned officers being killed early in the fight, Private Davies, though wounded, continued to fight, returning later for reinforcements, which he guided up with great skill and bravery. In all he performed three journeys, and only retired to have his wounds dressed when ordered to do so by an officer."

Private Allan Wexman Smith received the Russian Medal of St. George.

### THE SEVENTH BATTALION

When the *7th Battalion* was raised at Southport in 1859 its distinguishing feature was a red Garibaldian uniform, but in 1864 this was changed to the orthodox tunic and shako of a rifle corps. Afterwards merged into the 13th Lancashire Rifle Volunteers it became the 3rd Volunteer Battalion, and ultimately the 7th Territorial Battalion of the King's Liverpool Regiment, its headquarters being at Bootle. This battalion has always been distinguished for its marksmanship. In

---

## *The Spring of 1915*

---

1888 it won the Battalion Challenge Cup of the National Rifle Association, and it also won the N.R.A. (Aggregate) Grand Challenge Cup in 1886 and 1899. Private G. Jameson secured the Queen's Prize at Wimbledon in 1877, the first occasion on which a Lancashire Volunteer had carried off the coveted honour. Like the other Territorial Battalions of the regiment it sent in 1900 a detachment to take part in the South African War, during which two of its members, Corporal Culshaw and Private W. L. Rimmer, were promoted sergeant and corporal respectively for distinguished service in the field.

During the opening months of 1915, when the Germans were making such desperate efforts to break through to Calais, the 7th played a notable part alike in the trenches and on the battlefield. Writing in May 1915 to relatives in Liverpool, one of the officers of the regiment says—

"We have never had more than two hours' sleep at a time for days. To external view I am a mere mud heap. I tore my puttees to bits on the German wire on Saturday night, but the quartermaster raised a new pair for me yesterday. We are sitting tight at this moment in the ruins of an old German trench which our guns had previously knocked to bits. This is a very wet district and the trenches are a morass. If you touch the ground with a spade you draw water at once. This does not sound very cheerful, but as a matter of fact we are more so than you would think.

"The men are a most appalling lot of grouchers when things are comfortable. They will grumble bitterly about too little sugar in their tea, but for the last three days they have been wet and cold, unable to light fires, and half of them sleeping in the open trench and only half fed. They have been through a bad three days' shelling since the attack, and yet from Saturday night on I haven't heard one solitary grouse or grumble. They are simply wonderful."

Another account by an eye-witness of the fierce fighting during May 1915 is worth setting down.

---

## *Attack by the Seventh*

---

"A week previously two battalions had failed to take the trenches in broad daylight with the support of hundreds of guns. It was no discredit to them. They hadn't any more chance of getting through than a blind bat has of forcing its way through a wall six inches thick. The following Sunday another try was decided on. This time it was a night affair, and the Seventh Liverpool Territorials were given the van. Towards midnight they went out, supported by two other battalions. There wasn't so much artillery this time, but machine-gun detachments were made up, and I was lucky enough to get out with reserve ammunition for them. The night was almost too bright for the job, but it made it so much easier to move, and we were lucky enough to get half-way across before anything happened. There we halted, well in sight of the German position, where all was as still as the grave. After a short rest two companies of the Liverpools went forward cautiously. They had gone about eighty yards when from about ten different points of the enemy's lines star shells shot skyward. That was the signal that the attacking party had been discovered, and from that moment sheet after sheet of lead came tearing from the German lines. The Liverpool men realised that they were in for it by now, and they were eager to get out of danger. The best way out of danger in a job of that sort is into the enemy's trenches, and that was where the Liverpools dashed. As they swept forward they suffered terribly, both in officers and men. One officer, among the first to fall, called out to his men, as they went forward, 'Good-bye, lads, settle my account with them.' The men looked back for only a second or two. One shouted, 'We will that, sir,' and then they were on again to keep their promise.

"Shells began to drop unpleasantly near now, the yapping of the machine-guns adding to the din. Nothing seemed to deter the Liverpool chaps. They kept pushing on, and at last they gained the German trench at a point on the right. They were in with a rush, and very soon we saw their caps peeping above the parapet as they dashed along the trench to clear it. That was a tough job, for we learned afterwards that machine-guns were posted along the trench at intervals, and the approaches from one section to another were commanded by these deadly weapons.

"Soon we had the signal that the first line trench was taken, and then supports and machine-guns were hurried up to aid the attack on the second line. When we got to the first the Liverpools were well on their way to the second line. It was more strongly held than the first, because the enemy had had a chance to bring up their reserves. The Liverpool men had suffered heavily, but once the heat of battle takes you

---

## *Seventh Battalion Honours*

---

thoughts of losses vanish, and so they pressed on. Shortly they were close up to the second line of trenches. On top of the trench parapet the enemy could be seen standing up. They were no longer concerned about cover. They were steadily picking off the attacking party one by one. Our lads were too excited now to use their rifles. It was a matter of closing with the bayonet as quickly as possible. At one point they stumbled on a 'mug rack' (that's what we call barbed wire entanglements), and they were hung up there for a while, the Germans killing them off at their leisure. At another point under cover of machine-gun fire a party of men quickly cleared away the entanglements, and then with a rush the Liverpool lads swept on into the German trench. The Germans made a desperate attempt to hold their ground. Reinforcements were pressed forward from behind, but it was all useless. Once that tide of angry Liverpool men had got going, there was nothing made in Germany strong enough to stop it. Yard by yard the Germans were forced back. Then another section of the Liverpools succeeded in forcing their way into the trench. That finished the Germans. They seemed to lose all heart. Some threw away their rifles. Others tried to run, only to be shot or bayoneted. None of them seemed to have the gumption to surrender, until one of their officers stepped forward and held up his hands. At that signal hands went up all round, and then the place that had been the scene of so much of the noise and roar and madness of battle only a few minutes before was as quiet as a Quakers' meeting. Hundreds of prisoners and many machine-guns fell into our hands that day; but the best of all was that we cleared the way for further French advances on our right."

That the 7th Battalion has maintained its high reputation, is shown by the list of officers and men whose names appear on pages 192 to 197.

### THE EIGHTH BATTALION

The Liverpool Irish is one of the strongest and most popular corps in the great port. Raised in 1859, its first title was the 18th Lancashire Rifle Volunteers. During the first twenty years, while it was under the command of Colonel P. S. Bidwell, it was one of

---

## *The Liverpool Irish*

---

the strongest Volunteer battalions in Liverpool. In 1898, when commanded by Colonel R. Carruthers, the strength was raised to eight companies.

During the South African War the Liverpool Irish sent 244 of all ranks to the front.

That the men had their full share of fighting goes without saying. They took part in the engagements at Klip Flat Drift, Zand River Drift, Bethlehem, Slabberts Nek, the two battles of Belfast, as well as others at Lydenberg and elsewhere. Private Deansworth was mentioned in dispatches, Captain Warwick Williams and some dozen N.C.O.'s and men were amongst the wounded at the fierce fight of Bethlehem.

In 1908, when the old Volunteer force was merged in the new Territorial organisation, the 5th Volunteer Battalion—as the Liverpool Irish were then called—became the 8th, a name it still retains. It was then under the command of Lieut.-Colonel T. Taylor, and on his death the following year Lieut.-Colonel J. A. Cooney succeeded.

On August 4, 1914, it was mobilised.

On April 21, 1915, Lieut.-Colonel J. A. Cooney, T.D., was appointed commanding officer of the 8th's reserve battalion, and Lieut.-Colonel A. H. C. Neale (late Bedford Regiment) was gazetted to the foreign service battalion. He proceeded with the battalion to France, but was invalided home and Major Fagan (late Indian Army) was selected to fill the vacancy.

It speaks volumes for the *esprit de corps* of this battalion that between the order for mobilisation on August 1914 and February 1916, 3300 men were recruited for it under the Voluntary system.

---

## *Losses at Festubert*

---

On May 3, 1915, when the 1st Line Battalion proceeded to France, it was attached to the 154th Brigade of the 51st Highland Division, which was in turn attached to the Indian Army Corps.

At the end of May the battalion had its baptism of fire. During the next three weeks the men spent a great deal of their time in the trenches, being subjected all the time to heavy artillery fire. All this was bad enough, but the heavy and persistent rain frequently flooded the cuttings and dug-outs so that the men were often ankle-deep in water, while they were invariably soaked to the skin. It speaks volumes for the high courage and good humour of the rank and file that they bore these tribulations with stoical calm.

On June 15 they were withdrawn from the trenches in order to act as a battalion reserve during the attack on Festubert, the British command having resolved on another attempt to break through the enemy's strongly entrenched line. At 3 p.m. the 8th was ordered to attack. At 4.45 p.m. the attack was launched and pierced the enemy's trench line, but their artillery, machine-gun and rifle fire became so overwhelming that orders were received on the 17th inst. to withdraw our men, and the battalion was finally withdrawn to rest billets. In this fight between the dates of the 15th and 17th, in addition to Lieut. Downes, the Brigade Machine-Gun Officer, missing, the following officers were killed and wounded—

KILLED

FINEGAN, Captain H. M.  
BROWN, Captain George.  
DRAKE, Lieutenant H. M.

---

## *The Liverpool Irish*

---

### WOUNDED

KEATING, Captain R. P.  
WILLIAMS, Captain George.  
SHARPE, Second Lieutenant.  
ARMSTRONG, Second Lieutenant.  
GORDON, Second Lieutenant.

And 300 other ranks were killed, wounded, or missing. The battalion was thanked by the General Officer Commanding the Brigade for their gallant behaviour, and on the 20th inspected by the General Officer Commanding the Division, and thanked by him; and a message was received through him to the same effect from Field-Marshal Sir John French, commanding the British Expeditionary Force.

A member of the battalion in writing home says—

“I am pleased to say that my two brothers and myself are, thank God, quite well. I suppose you will have heard by now of the attack made by the old 8th. At 6 p.m. on the 15th inst. the Scottish Rifles, Loyal North Lancs., with the Royal Lancasters in reserve, started the attack and succeeded in taking two lines of German trenches; but after stubborn fighting were forced to retire. As the German Prussian Guard strongly reinforced the beaten Westphalians their artillery caused heavy losses among our troops. The next day, the 8th were holding the British fire trench, and were doing very good work bringing in wounded from the previous day's fighting, some men displaying great bravery in spite of the sniping. In the afternoon we received about an hour's notice that we were to attack the same position that the other three regiments failed to hold. C Company were to lead the attack by platoons, followed by A; then were to come D and B. Promptly to time C Company, gallantly led by poor Captain Finegan, mounted the parapets only to be met with a perfect tornado of shells, which completed levelled our trenches and breastworks to the ground, when their machine-guns and rifles assisted in destroying our poor fellows: it was truly terrible. I will leave you, sir, to try and imagine what it was like, when I tell you that in the two evenings our casualties were four officers killed, two wounded, and nearly 300 N.C.O.'s and men killed, wounded and missing.

From this time the battalion was constantly doing

---

## *Honours won at Festubert*

---

duty and reliefs, in and out of the trenches, until July 27, 1915, when they moved with the rest of the division further south.

About August 6 a battalion of the New Army was sent up to be instructed in trench warfare by the 8th before being entrusted with a section themselves. On the 11th the battalion moved into Divisional reserve, and on the 26th they went into the trenches again. Such was the dull and dangerous routine through the weary winter months of 1915.

Unhappily the above cold record gives little idea of the dash, the courage, and the splendid impetuosity with which the Liverpool Irish charged at Festubert. Well may this splendid battalion rank high in the latest annals of the British Army. The city to which they belong has every reason to be proud of them.

Lieutenant Downes was mentioned in dispatches, and the following members of the battalion were awarded the D.C.M.

**Lance-Corporal P. MAHON.** "For conspicuous gallantry and very excellent service rendered at Rue d'Ouvert on June 16, 1915, when, although twice wounded, he pushed forward, and by his cheerful example encouraged the men to accompany him through a hurricane of bursting shells towards the enemy's lines. The gallant conduct of this soldier was a splendid example of devotion to duty."

**Private J. CUDDY.** "For conspicuous gallantry at Rue d'Ouvert in rescuing three wounded men belonging to another regiment, who had been lying in front of the enemy's trenches for twelve hours. This gallant act was performed under heavy and sustained rifle fire from the enemy, and many previous attempts to rescue the men had failed."

### THE NINTH BATTALION

The 9th embraces the Everton District of Liverpool. Founded in 1860, it was officially known as the 18th Rifle Volunteers, but long bore the local title of "The



---

## *The Ninth Battalion*

---

Press Guards" owing to the fact that it was largely composed of men connected with the newspapers and the printing and publishing trades. Its head was Colonel MacCorquodale, of the well-known printing firm, and its officers were mainly identified with the same industry. In its early days it possessed certain privileges unique amongst the northern auxiliary forces, one being the wearing of a busby similar to that possessed by the Guards, and another the right to march through the city of Liverpool with fixed bayonets. With the rearrangement of the Volunteer forces in 1888 all this came to an end.

During the South African War the 9th (or, as it was then, the 6th) sent a good many men out as drafts and they worthily acquitted themselves.

On the outbreak of war in August 1914, the 9th was undergoing its annual training. Early in 1915 Lieut.-Colonel Watts, who had been connected with the battalion for thirty years, took over the command of the reserve battalion, and Lieut.-Colonel Lloyd, V.D., was gazetted to the foreign service battalion.

On March 12, 1915, the battalion proceeded to France, and was at once attached to the First Division under Sir Douglas Haig. Their baptism of fire quickly followed, for they were selected to occupy the captured German trenches at Neuve Chapelle. When Lieut.-Colonel Lloyd was invalided home in April the command devolved on Major Bolland, a fearless soldier and ideal commander, but he was reported missing after the battle of Aubers on May 9. On this disastrous day Lieutenant Mathwin also fell, and Lieutenant Fulton was seriously wounded. Although the casualty list was a heavy one the 9th covered itself with glory and won great praise from the Divisional Commander.

---

## *Neuve Chapelle, Aubers and Loos*

---

Amongst the many deeds of high courage that of Private W. Smith (2173) deserves special mention. He was one of twelve bombers with an officer who were held up in front of the German line by barbed wire. In a short time the officer (already severely wounded), Smith and another man alone survived. Although wounded and gassed himself, Smith practically carried the officer, through a tornado of shot and shell, back to the British line, a distance of 150 yards.

Lieut.-Colonel Ramsey of the Middlesex Regiment, who succeeded Major Bolland, led the battalion in such an admirable manner as to win golden opinions. This was demonstrated during the British drive at Loos on September 25, 1915, when the 9th penetrated three German trenches and captured 412 prisoners. During the battle Major F. S. Evans won the D.S.O.—the first Liverpool Territorial officer to secure that distinction. Although severely wounded he encouraged his men to the last and did much to enable them to win their way through.

In the Order of the Day issued on October 9 by Sir Douglas Haig, the following appears—

“ I am very glad to hear of the great deeds of the 9th Battalion the King's (Liverpool Regiment) on October 8, 1915. They have proved themselves most worthy comrades of the First Liverpools (who started with me from Aldershot), and have constantly fought like heroes throughout the campaign. Please convey my very heartiest congratulations to all concerned and of the First Division, of which I am proud to see the determined fighting spirit is as strong as ever in spite of heavy losses.”

The 9th lost several admirable officers at Loos and Hulluch during September and October 1915. Amongst them was Lieutenant T. Watts, a son of Lieut.-Colonel Luther Watts, and brother of Captain Norman

---

## *The Ninth Battalion*

---

Watts of the same battalion. Lieutenant Milner also met a hero's death during the advance on Loos. He was bandaging a wounded private's arm amid a perfect tornado of shot and shell when he was struck down.

Lieutenant (temporary Major) Faithful Sidney Evans won the D.S.O. "For conspicuous gallantry on September 25, 1915, in the attack near Le Ruloire. He commanded his company with great skill and dash, and his cheerfulness and disregard of danger had a marked effect on his men, who were attacking for the first time over open ground. He was wounded in the attack."

The following officers of the 9th have been awarded the Military Cross, but no particulars have been published at the time of writing.

HUNT, Lieutenant (temp. Major) J. W. B.  
LEDERER, Lieutenant (temp. Captain) P. G. A.

Amongst the N.C.O.'s and men of the 9th who won the D.C.M. were the following—

Sergeant R. WILLIAMS, 9th Battalion Liverpool Regiment. "For conspicuous gallantry. On many occasions, by his bravery and devotion to duty under fire, he gave a fine example to all ranks."

Private W. SMITH, 9th Battalion Liverpool Regiment. "For conspicuous bravery and devotion. After his bombing officer and non-com. officer had fallen, he led the survivors of the party with great skill and bravery. Later in the day he carried the wounded officer back to our lines under heavy fire, and then went out and brought in a second wounded man. In attempting a third rescue he was himself badly wounded."

The French Military Medal was awarded to Company Sergeant-Major Byrne for conspicuous bravery during the great German counter attack at Hulluch.

---

## *The Liverpool Scottish*

---

### THE TENTH BATTALION

The Liverpool Scottish are to the great Mersey port what the London Scottish are to the Metropolis. Founded in 1900, the battalion at once became popular. Unlike the London Scottish, however, it wears a distinctive tartan kilt peculiar to the Forbes clan. It was one of the first Territorial battalions to go to the front, and was fighting at close quarters early in November 1914.

The terrible strain to which the men in the trenches have been subject night and day, and the necessity for the greatest vigilance and care, is demonstrated in a letter from Piper Hampson. Writing early in March 1915, he says—

"The beggars seemed to have each loophole marked. One of our chaps (D Company) was shot and died immediately. The bullet passed through the sandbag and through his neck, and also through another chap's arm who was behind him. Another of our fellows had his rifle splintered through his loophole. He pulled his rifle out and covered the hole with a spade, which was immediately drilled through with a German bullet."

At the beginning of the war the Germans regarded the kilted battalions with curiosity tinged with contempt, and the tall, bare-legged warriors proved a fruitful topic for the heavy-witted German caricaturists. But Ypres, Neuve Chapelle, Hooge and a score of other battles have inspired them with such a wholesome terror that when they see the fierce athletic figures climbing over the parapets and charging towards them, cheering like men possessed, the skirl of the pipes, meanwhile, sounding shrilly over the tumult, every man of them resolved to drive his bayonet home, they do not always wait for an introduction.

---

## *At Neuve Chapelle and Hooge*

---

At Neuve Chapelle, where the trenches ran with blood and the attacking British had to climb over heaps of the enemy dead, the Liverpool Scottish rivalled the Scottish Regulars in the performance of heroic deeds. The charge of the kilted battalions will live long in the memory of all who saw it. It was a human avalanche, a torrential force which nothing could withstand.

The transformation of the peaceable and amiable citizen into the ideal soldier is one of the most amazing psychological studies of the war. Men who only a few months before had led tranquil and plodding lives in offices and shops, now lay dying on the battlefield. But there was no repining, no regrets for the vanished peace of other days. They were possessed by one thought, one desire. Even while the eternal shadow was enfolding them they would raise themselves by a supreme effort and cry, "Scotland for ever," or "Good old Liverpool Scottish," and then fall back dead as their avenging comrades swept forward.

We get some idea of the ordeal to which the Territorials were subjected at the battle of Hooge on June 16, from a letter written by Private Collins of the Liverpool Scots. The battalion had been waiting in the trenches all night, and was longing to get out into the open, when the order "Fix bayonets" ran down the line and the men dashed out and rushed swiftly towards the enemy.

"Our corporal, who was getting over in front of me, fell back with a bullet through his head, and a lot of our chaps dropped, but nothing could stop us, and away we raced, everybody shouting, 'Remember Lusitania' and 'Remember Whit Monday' (the day the Huns gassed us).

"We cleared the first German trench and made for the second. All the time a giant Prussian soldier kept firing at

---

## *The Liverpool Scottish*

---

me, and when I turned sideways a bullet went into my tin of bully beef, but instead of him getting me I got him, and his helmet also, which I subsequently lost.

"Having taken the second line of trenches we waited only a few minutes before racing for the third line, which we captured after severe fighting. We then made our way towards the fourth line under a terrible rain of bullets from machine-guns and shells. But there was no stopping us; we took the fourth line and then fell back to the third line. Later we were ordered to fall back to the second line.

"I was just about to retire when the trench was blown in on me and I was buried in the debris, only my head showing. The Germans took this part of the trench and killed two of our wounded by me. Their success was a short-lived one, however, as our chaps then made a charge, retook the trench, and I was carried down to the dressing station. I had accounted for one Bavarian and three Prussian Guards."

The Liverpool Scottish have a great record in the way of honours. The following were mentioned in Sir John French's dispatch of November 20, 1914—

ANDERSON, Captain A. S. (temp. Major).

DUNHAM, Company Sergeant-Major J. W.

The following officers, N.C.O.'s and men of the 10th Battalion were mentioned in Sir John French's dispatch of May 31, 1915—

DAVIDSON, Lieutenant-Colonel J. R.

DICKINSON, Captain R. F. B.

JAMES, Captain and Adjutant C. P. (Argyll and Sutherland Highlanders).

GRAHAM, Lieutenant (temp. Captain) J.

McKINNELL, Captain B.

ELLIOTT, 3678 Lance-Corporal C.

RAWLINGS, 3148 Lance-Corporal B. L. (died).

CARR, 3225 Private D.

JONES, 3322 Private A.

WALLACE, 3728 Private J. L.

The following members of the battalion have been awarded the Distinguished Conduct Medal—

Corporal S. SMITH. "For conspicuous gallantry and marked ability at Hooze on June 16, 1915. With a small party he worked up a German trench, killed thirty of the enemy

---

## *The Liverpool Scottish*

---

with bombs, including a machine-gun team, and captured the gun. Corporal Smith subsequently found his way into the fourth line of German trenches and remained there until ordered to retire, and later he repulsed with complete success a counter attack made by the enemy."

**Private W. W. HOWARTH.** "For conspicuous gallantry in going out in front of his trench after dawn under aimed fire and bringing in a wounded non-com. officer."

**Private F. F. BELL.** "For conspicuous gallantry on many occasions. He tended and dressed the wounds of men of three battalions, and was noted twice by officers of other regiments for his bravery and good work."

**Private W. SHORT.** "For conspicuous gallantry. With another man, who was killed, he advanced on an enemy machine-gun detachment with bombs, and either destroyed it or forced it to retire."

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER XVIII

#### THE WORK OF THE SERVICE BATTALIONS

Fifteen New Units—The Dock Battalion—A Victory for Peace.

EIGHT service battalions of the Liverpools (the 11th to the 14th and the 17th to the 20th) have worthily maintained the honours of the regiment. They have been serving in North France and Flanders, and their considerable list of casualties shows that the fighting has been to good purpose. The 15th, 16th, 21st and 22nd are reserve battalions.

The service battalions are remarkable for the fact that they are the firstfruits of the amazing recruiting campaign which Lord Derby headed and brought to such wonderful success. It is only necessary to say that it was at Liverpool where the "Pals" Battalion and the "Dock" Battalion originated, while the "Bantam" Battalions first came into being in the adjacent borough of Birkenhead. In this connection it may be stated that, in recognition of the splendid services of Lord Derby in raising the City Battalions of the King's Liverpool Regiment, the King gave permission for the "pals" to wear, as their regimental badge, the crest of the house of Stanley. Appreciating the honour, Lord Derby presented each man with the crest in silver. The Stanley crest was last borne in battle some 200 years ago.



---

## *Service Battalions*

---

Although late in the field when compared with the older battalions, the officers and men of these new corps soon showed the metal they were made of, as the following announcements will indicate.

The Military Cross was conferred on

Temporary Captain FRANCIS DE WOLF of the 16th Battalion King's Liverpool Regiment (attached to the 1st Battalion the Royal Dublin Fusiliers). "For conspicuous devotion to duty in 'Dublin Castle' in the Gallipoli Peninsula, from October 1 to 18, 1915. He was indefatigable in his duties and took great trouble in instructing bomb-throwers. He has always displayed coolness and decision under fire and has got the best out of the men under him."

A tribute must also be paid to the 1st and 2nd Garrison Battalions, made up of fighting men who, for reasons of age, etc., are precluded from service in the front line.

### THE DOCK BATTALION

The creation of this unique corps does infinite credit to Lord Derby, the members of the Mersey Docks and Harbour Board and the local trade union leaders. The loyal manner in which the affected interests co-operated to put an end to a dangerous industrial situation, to place the labour question on a sure foundation, and to secure the maximum of benefits with the minimum of friction, has had a wide and beneficial influence on the community generally. It also furnishes a hopeful augury for the future. It may well be the groundwork for that complete organisation of capital and labour the want of which has so seriously affected our national well-being and has led to so many bitter and costly quarrels.

It is not necessary to try to trace the genesis of the idea. A similar organisation existed on the

---

## *Dock Battalion*

---

Forth early in 1915 and another at Havre, and in both places the system was known to have worked admirably. When the wages trouble at the Liverpool Docks became acute in the early months of 1915, the suggestion was thrown out—why not enlist the men in a labour battalion and give point and zest to their undoubted patriotism? The men were already well organised. They thoroughly understood the value of unity and they had no desire to promote their selfish ends at the expense of their countrymen. Rising to the occasion, Mr. A. Chandler, the secretary of the Mersey Dock Board, and Mr. James Sexton, the able secretary of the Dockers' Union, threw themselves into the matter enthusiastically, and as they were loyally supported by their colleagues, and the press and the public were in every way sympathetic, the suggested battalion soon began to take definite shape.

Lord Derby, whose unceasing labours as the great recruiter had already earned the gratitude of the nation, carried on the movement with characteristic energy, and as he was by general acclaim appointed Colonel of the new battalion, difficulties and suspicion vanished as if by magic, peace, good-will and tolerance were established, and the rest was easy.

---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### CHAPTER XIX

#### "LIGHTS OUT"

HAVING concluded what has been a labour of love to me, a native of Liverpool and an old Lancashire Volunteer, I venture to express the hope that the people of Liverpool and district will unite in doing honour to the great regiment which bears the name of the city. The regiment has, in these later days, nobly upheld the grandest traditions of the British Army, has done infinite credit to the great port, covered itself with glory, and has maintained those principles and practices of liberty which are so closely interwoven in the fabric of the State.

Although the end of the War is not yet, it may be well to take time by the forelock and ask whether the day has not come for the citizens of Liverpool, and those associated with it by birth and devotion, to organise thoroughly some method of grappling with the difficulties with which the close of the War threatens the community. So far as an enduring memorial is concerned nothing could be finer than the tablets which have already been placed in the vestibule of the Town Hall in memory of the illustrious dead. Possibly some great public monument will be erected, although it will be difficult to design one of more simple and striking grandeur than that raised to the

---

## *The City and the Regiment*

---

heroes of the Afghan and Boer Wars standing in the public ground behind St. George's Hall.

When the inevitable Peace comes it will find thousands of men out of work; and considerable distress and confusion must ensue, unless steps have been taken in advance, say by a large and representative committee, to secure congenial employment for all who are able and willing to resume their civil duties. It cannot be a difficult task for a great business community to organise a complete register of employers willing to find places for men, or for the City Council to organise works of public utility, where the surplus unskilled workers may be able to earn their daily bread.

The history of Liverpool has repeatedly demonstrated that its heart is great enough for any sacrifice in a worthy cause. The sick, the wounded and the disabled of the regiment will be, alas, numerous, by the time this dreadful conflict has run its course. Then there are the widows and orphans, whose mute sufferings appeal to every heart. Is it beyond the power of a thoroughly united community to acquire extensive areas of land outside the city boundaries, and settle these sufferers upon them where, amid the calm and serenity of bountiful nature, they may find balm for their wounds and also eke out a modest competence in ministering to the needs of the general community? The last thing such people ask for is a paralysing charity which would doom them to corroding idleness, and the greatest boon they would seek would be a fair and legitimate opportunity to earn the wherewithal to keep them in modest comfort and to maintain their independence.

But a thousand-and-one methods will suggest

---

### *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

themselves to those whose hearts are attuned to sympathy and love. Of one thing I am assured. The people of Liverpool and district will not fail in their duty towards the regiment which has served the nation so bravely.

---

## Appendix A

---

### THE OFFICERS' ROLL OF HONOUR OF THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL REGIMENT)

IN THE GREAT WAR, TO THE END OF  
DECEMBER 1915.

*All the officers are of the First and Second Battalions, unless otherwise specified.*

#### KILLED

ADAMS, Lt. L. K., 7th Bn.	DEAN, Capt. J. S., 7th Bn.
ALEXANDER, Sec.-Lt. W. G., 7th Bn.	DENNY, Sec.-Lt. B. M. R.
ALLAN, Lt. W. S., 7th Bn.	DINNEN, Capt. C. H.
ANDREWS, Lt. F. G.	DRAKE, Sec.-Lt. H. M., 8th (Irish) Bn.
BAILLON, Sec.-Lt. G. W., 15th, attd. 1st Bn.	DUN, Capt. L. F., 10th Bn. (Scottish).
BAKER, Lt. E. B.	DUNLOP, Sec.-Lt. C. D. H., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).
BANNATYNE, Lt.-Col. W. S.	EDWARDS, Sec.-Lt. J. T., 3rd Bn.
BARBER, Sec.-Lt. J. C., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).	ELLIOT, Major H., 11th Bn.
BATTEN, Capt. J. H. S.	FAIRCLOUGH, Capt. R. J., 5th Bn.
BEWES, Lt. R. C. H., attd. R. Flying Corps.	FENERAN, Capt. F. E.
BROCKLEHURST, Capt. E. H., 6th Bn.	FINEGAN, Capt. H. M., 8th (Irish) Bn.
BROWN, Capt. G., 8th (Irish) Bn.	FORD, Sec.-Lt. A. L., 12th Bn.
BURNELL, Sec.-Lt. G. C., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).	FURNEAUX, Lt. P. T.
CHESTER, Lt. J. L., 9th Bn.	GAMBLE, Sec.-Lt. R. M. B., 7th Bn.
CHRISTIE, Sec.-Lt. C. P., 15th, attd. 11th Bn.	GRAHAM, Capt. J., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).
COHEN, Lt. G. H., 5th Bn.	GREENHALGH, Sec.-Lt. M. L., 15th, attd. 6th Bn.
CURLETT, Lt. P. A., 3rd, attd. 1st Bn.	GREIG, Capt. W. E., 5th Bn.
	HANNEN, Sec.-Lt. N. L., 7th Bn.
	HARVEY, Sec.-Lt. W., 3rd, attd. 1st Bn.

## *Appendix A*

HUDSON, Sec.-Lt. C. H.	O'DONOGHUE, Sec.-Lt. H. P.
KENDALL, Sec.-Lt. P. D. (L'pool Scottish).	ORMESHER, Lt. W., 16th Bn.
KENYON, Sec.-Lt. J. de W., 4th, attd. 1st Bn.	PLUMMER, Sec.-Lt. A. H., 5th Bn.
KYRKE-SMITH, Capt. A. K.	POCOCK, Sec.-Lt. T. G.
LEITCH, Sec.-Lt. V. B. (L'pool Scottish).	RADFORD, Capt. A. L., 9th Bn., attd. 8th Lancs. Fus.
LUMSDEN, Capt. D. A., 4th Bn.	RICH, Lt. J. S.
LYDDEN, Sec.-Lt. F. C., 4th Bn.	ROBERTS, Lt. F. J., 3rd, attd. 1st Bn.
MCCLELLAND, Sec.-Lt. T., 7th Bn.	RYAN, Capt. J. H. A.
MCKINNELL, Capt. B., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).	ST. C. CLERY, Sec.-Lt. C. L.
MACLEOD, Capt. D., 10th Bn. (Scottish).	STORR, Capt. L. P., 12th Bn.
MADDEN, Sec.-Lt. T. H.	TANNER, Capt. R. E.
MARSH, Sec.-Lt. N. C., 16th Bn.	TURNER, Sec.-Lt. W. S., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).
MARSHALL, Capt. F.	TWEEDALE, Capt. M., 7th Bn.
MATHWIN, Sec.-Lt. D. G., 9th Bn.	WALLACE, Sec.-Lt. H. B.
MILNER, Lt. F. S., 9th Bn.	WARD, Sec.-Lt. A.
MONTGOMERY, Capt. W. S.	WATTS, Sec.-Lt. T. W., 9th Bn.
MORTEN, Sec.-Lt. G.	WEBB, Lt. H. M. T.
	WILSON, Lt. T., 6th Bn.
	WOLLEY-DOD, Lt. D. R., 12th Bn.
	YOUNG, Lt. P. M.

### WOUNDED

ALEXANDER, Lt. H. G., 7th Bn.	BROWN, Lt. G. H. W. L., 16th Bn.
ALLEN, Sec.-Lt. G. W. D., 4th Bn.	BUCKLEY, Capt. A., 5th Bn.
ANGELBECK, Sec.-Lt. A., 16th, attd. 9th Bn.	CALLAGHAN, Hon. Lt. and Qm. H., 11th Bn.
ARMSTRONG, Sec.-Lt. T. H., 8th Bn.	CARLETON, Sec.-Lt. G. F.
BAILEY, Lt.-Col. V. D., 11th Bn.	CARTER, Lt.-Col. B. C. M.
BARDSLEY, Lt. F. S. E., 6th Bn.	CHARRINGTON, Sec.-Lt. C. E. W., 4th, attd. 1st Bn.
BAYLEY, Sec.-Lt. V., 15th, attd. 7th Bn. Lancs. Fus.	CHARSLEY, Capt. R. B., 12th Bn.
BEAN, Capt. C. A., 7th Bn.	CLAYTON, Sec.-Lt. H. W., 11th Bn.
BEAZLEY, Capt. E. B., 18th Bn.	COHEN, Major S. S. G., 5th Bn.
BLAKE, Lt. F. S., 15th Bn.	COLMAN, Lt. C. J.
BLEASE, Capt. H., 15th, attd. 7th Bn. Lancs. Fus.	COLTART, Capt. A. H., 4th Bn.
BOULT, Sec.-Lt. R. H. S., 6th Bn.	COODE-ADAMS, Sec.-Lt. R. W. H.
BOWMAN, Sec.-Lt. C. E., 11th Bn.	COX, Sec.-Lt. H. B., 5th Bn.
BREMNER, Sec.-Lt. S., 15th, attd. 7th Bn. Lancs. Fus.	CUNNINGHAM, Capt. R. D., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).
BRIGGS, Sec.-Lt. H. R., Unatt. list, Indian Army, attd. 4th Bn.	CUNNINGHAM, Sec.-Lt. T. E., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).

## *Appendix A*

- DAVIES, Sec.-Lt. E., 15th, attd. 13th Bn.  
 DERRICHE-JONES, Lt. A. D., 3rd, attd. 1st Bn.  
 DICKINSON, Capt. G. F., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).  
 DIGGORY, Sec.-Lt. P., 9th Bn.  
 DOBELL, Lt. R. L., 6th Bn.  
 ECKES, Capt. J. A., 7th Bn.  
 EILLS, Lt. C.  
 ELLIS, Capt. C. S., 9th Bn.  
 EVANS, Major F. S., 9th Bn.  
 EVANS, Capt. W. L., 5th Bn.  
 FOX, Capt. R. P.  
 FRENCH, Lt. B. St. G., 15th Bn.  
 FULTON, Lt. and Adj. A. W., 9th Bn.  
 FULTON, Sec.-Lt. C. F. V.  
 FURNEAUX, Lt. P. T.  
 GALT, Sec.-Lt. R. B., 11th Bn.  
 GARNETT, Lt. E., 3rd, attd. 4th Bn.  
 GAUNTLETT, Capt. V. C.  
 GOFF, Lt. C. E.  
 GORDON, Sec.-Lt. R. H., 8th (Irish) Bn.  
 GRAY, Sec.-Lt. L. A. B., 11th Bn.  
 GRINDLEY, Capt. D. R., 5th Bn.  
 GRINDLEY, Capt. J. H., 5th Bn.  
 GROUNDS, Capt. N. B. C. B.  
 HALL, Capt. E. R. A.  
 HALLAM, Sec.-Lt. V. J.  
 HARRIS, Sec.-Lt. E. R.  
 HARRISON, Sec.-Lt. A. W.  
 HARSTON, Capt. T. B., 16th Bn.  
 HASELHURST, Sec.-Lt. H. E.  
 HAWTHORN, Capt. and Temp. Major G. M. P.  
 HILL, Lt. F. A., 15th Bn.  
 HORTON, Lt. L. E. L.  
 HOUROYD, Capt. B. W., 9th Bn.  
 HUDSON, Capt. P.  
 HUNT, Major J. W. B., 9th Bn.  
 HUTCHISON, Lt. G. M. H., 3rd, attd. 1st Bn.  
 JACKSON, Sec.-Lt. R. R., 4th Bn.  
 JAMES, Capt. and Adj. C. P., Argyll and Sutherland Highldrs., attd. 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).  
 JENKINS, Capt. G. H., 4th Bn.  
 KEATING, Capt. R. P., 8th (Irish) Bn.  
 KEET, Lt. H. G., 5th Bn.  
 KYNASTON, Sec.-Lt. N. E. V.  
 LANGMORE, Capt. L. G., 11th Bn.  
 LAST, Sec.-Lt. E. R.  
 LAURENCE, Sec.-Lt. H. R., 15th Bn.  
 LEDERER, Capt. P. G. A., 9th Bn.  
 LINDSAY, Sec.-Lt. C., 10 Bn. (L'pool Scottish).  
 LLOYD, Sec.-Lt. W. E.  
 LONGBOTTOM, Lt. W., 5th, attd. No. 6 Trench Mortar Battery.  
 MCCONKEY, Sec.-Lt. A. J. G., Unatt. list, Indian Army, attd. 4th Bn.  
 McDONALD, Sec.-Lt. R., 15th Bn.  
 MACDONALD, Sec.-Lt. W. R.  
 MCGILCHRIST, Lt. A. M., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).  
 McMILLIN, Lt. H. S., 9th Bn.  
 MAPPLEBECK, Sec.-Lt. T., 4th Bn.  
 MELLY, Sec.-Lt. H. P. E. M., 4th Bn.  
 MEREDITH, Lt. W. M.  
 MILLER, Lt. G. W.  
 MOLONY, Lt. C. A., 13th Bn.  
 MORRISON, Sec.-Lt. L., 15th attd. 7th Bn. Lancs. Fus.  
 MOSTYN, Capt. W. J., 9th L'pool R.  
 MULRAY, Sec.-Lt. T. B., 11th Bn.  
 MUMFORD, Sec.-Lt. W. C., 7th Bn.  
 NEALE, Lt.-Col. A. H. C., 8th (Irish) Bn.  
 NEWTON, Sec.-Lt. H. W., 9th Bn.  
 NICHOLS, Capt. A. R.  
 NORRIS, Capt. S. E., 3rd, attd. 1st Bn.  
 OCKLESTON, Lt. W. H.  
 OPPENHEIMER, Capt. H. S.  
 OXENBOULD, Sec.-Lt. B. H., 6th Bn.  
 PATERSON, Capt. J. C., 7th Bn.  
 PAYNE, Sec.-Lt. E., 9th Bn.



## *Appendix A*

PHILPOTS, Sec.-Lt. W. E., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).	STEPHENSON, Sec.-Lt. A. T., 7th Bn.
PHIPPS, Sec.-Lt. C. J.	STEVENSON, Capt. J., 16th, attd. 2nd R. Fus.
PITTENDRIGH, Lt. W. L., 7th Bn.	TAYLOR, Sec.-Lt. C. A., 5th Bn.
PRATT, Sec.-Lt. J. A., 3rd, attd. 1st Bn.	THIN, Major E. G., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).
QUINNELL, Sec.-Lt. A. V., 16th, attd. 9th Bn.	THOMAS, Sec.-Lt. H. J., 16th, attd. 10th Bn.
REDDING, Sec.-Lt. J. E., 7th Bn.	TISDALL, Sec.-Lt. J. T. St. Clair, 1st, attd. 11th Bn.
REID, Sec.-Lt. O. A., 4th Bn.	TRUBSHAWE, Sec.-Lt. W. V.
RENISON, Capt. W. J. H., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).	TRUTSHAWE, Sec.-Lt. W. L.
RICHARDSON, Sec.-Lt. G. F., 5th Bn.	TUDOR, Sec.-Lt. R. G.
RICHARDSON, Sec.-Lt. H.	WALL, Lt. L. G., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).
ROME, Sec.-Lt. T. E., 6th Bn.	WHITSON, Lt. H. T., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).
ROSLING, Sec.-Lt. D. W.	WHITTAKER, Lt. L. W., 11th Bn.
SAVAGE, Lt. A. M.	WILLIAMS, Capt. G., 8th (Irish) Bn.
SCOTT-TUCKER, Lt. D. G. H. H.	WILLIAMS, Sec.-Lt. J. S., 3rd Bn.
SHARPE, Sec.-Lt. A. H., 4th Bn.	WILSON, Lt. R., 15th, attd. 7th Bn. Lancs. Fus.
SHARPE, Sec.-Lt. J. S., 8th (Irish) Bn.	DE WOLF, Capt. and Adj. H. F., 16th Bn., attd. 1st R. Fus.
SIMMANCE, Sec.-Lt. A. J. S., 4th Bn.	
SLEIGH, Lt. J. H.	
SMYTH, Sec.-Lt. G. R. G.	
SNATT, Lt. P. C.	
SODEN, Sec.-Lt. L. C., 4th Bn.	
STENHOUSE, Lt. A. H., 6th Bn.	

### MISSING

ANDERSON, Major A. S., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish) (believed killed).	DOWNES, Lt. H. L., 8th Bn. (Irish) (believed killed).
BALLINGER, Sec.-Lt. F. A., 4th Bn. (believed killed).	HARVEY, Capt. J., 7th Bn.
BARGH, Sec.-Lt. G., attd. 1st Suffolk R.	HUGHES, Major A., 7th Bn.
BOLLAND, Major T. J., 9th Bn.	MAPPLEBECK, Lt. G. R.
BULLEN, Sec.-Lt. W. F., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish) (believed killed).	REID, Sec.-Lt. W., 6th Bn.
DOLL, Lt. P. W. R. (unofficially re- ported killed).	ROPER, Sec.-Lt. L. W., 7th Bn.
	WHITE, Sec.-Lt. J. P., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish) (believed prisoner of war).

### WOUNDED AND MISSING

GEMMELL, Lt. R. A., 10th Bn. (L'pool Scottish).	WHEEN, Capt. J.
--	-----------------

---

## *Appendix A*

---

The following are the names of officers of the King's (Liverpool Regiment) who have been killed or wounded from January 1 to June 30 inclusive. The War Office has ceased to publish the numbers of the battalions to which officers belong.

### KILLED

BAINES, Sec.-Lt. K. J. M.	MUNRO, Lt. R.
CARVER, Sec.-Lt. H. Q.	PEARSON, Capt. E. H.
HEYWORTH, Sec.-Lt. W. A.	REEVE, Sec.-Lt. H.
HOLLINS, Hon. Lt. and Qm. T. P.	ROWE, Sec.-Lt. T.
HORBURY, Sec.-Lt. G. S.	SODEN, Lt. H. C.
HUTCHINSON, Lt. W. M.	TAYLOR, Sec.-Lt. C. R.
MACKIE, Sec.-Lt. J.	TOWERS, Lt. and Adj. G. M.
MORRIS, Sec.-Lt. W. O. E.	WAINWRIGHT, Lt. H. C.

### WOUNDED

ADAMSON, Sec.-Lt. J. H.	JAMESON, Sec.-Lt. E. C.
AINSTIE, Lt. F. M.	JESSUP, Sec.-Lt. A. C.
BAGNALL, Sec.-Lt. A. E.	OATFIELD, Lt. W. J.
BANE, Sec.-Lt. L. A.	ODOM, Sec.-Lt. G. C.
BEAZLEY, Capt. E. B.	PARK, Lt. D. H.
BLAKE, Capt. F. S.	PATON, Capt. W.
BURNETT, Sec.-Lt. J. H. N.	PHILLIPS, Lt. J. A.
BUTTERLY, Sec.-Lt. G. C.	REID, Capt. O. A.
CLARK, Sec.-Lt. R. V.	SEARLE, Sec.-Lt. J. R.
CLEGG, Sec.-Lt. J.	SHARPLES, Sec.-Lt. G. W.
CUNNINGHAM, Capt. R. D.	SHEARMAN, Sec.-Lt. T. E. C.
DAKIN, Sec.-Lt. H. B.	SMITH, Sec.-Lt. R. H.
DAWSON, Hon. Lt. and Qm. A. C.	SODEN, Capt. L. C.
DIXON, Sec.-Lt. A. P.	STEWART, Sec.-Lt. J. H. F.
GRAY, Sec.-Lt. V.	TAYLOR, Sec.-Lt. C. A.
HARRIS, Sec.-Lt. P. G.	THOMAS, Sec.-Lt. H. G.
HARRISON, Lt.-Col. E. J.	THOMPSON, Capt. J. G.
HEAD, Sec.-Lt. R. E.	THOMPSON, Lt. R. M.
HEATLEY, Sec.-Lt. L.	THOMSON, Lt. A. L. S.
HEWSON, Sec.-Lt. A. F. W.	TRIPP, Sec.-Lt. H. B.
HICK, Lt. G. T.	TRUBSHAWE, Sec.-Lt. W. V.
HIGSON, Lt. J. N.	WARE, Capt. D. C.
HODGSON, Capt. A. J.	WARRING, Sec.-Lt. W. R. A.
HOLDEN, Sec.-Lt. A. H.	WELSH, Sec.-Lt. I. D.
HOLT, Capt. P. D.	WILLIAMS, Lt. W. H.

---

## Appendix B

---

### SUPPLEMENTARY LIST OF HONOURS

(TO THE END OF JUNE 1916)

The following list embraces the names of officers, N.C.O. and men who have won distinction since the book went to press. It embraces those published in the *London Gazette* down to and including June 15, 1916. As particulars are not published until some time after the names have been issued, they cannot always be given here.

- The name of General SIR WILLIAM HENRY MACKINNON, K.C.B., K.C.V.O., Colonel, The King's (Liverpool Regiment), figured in the list of birthday honours of June 3, 1916.
- Lieut.-Colonel (temporary Brigadier-General) CHAS. JOHN STEAVENSON was, on the same date, awarded the Order of St. Michael and St. George. Later, June 15, he was mentioned in Sir Douglas Haig's Dispatch "for gallant and distinguished conduct in the field."
- Lieut.-Colonel CARTER (temporary Brigadier-General), B.C.M., C.M.G., was also mentioned in Sir Douglas Haig's Dispatch of the last-named date.
- Lieut.-Colonel J. J. SHUTE (commanding the 5th Battalion in succession to Colonel J. M. McMASTER, C.M.G., V.D., has been awarded the D.S.O. He was also mentioned in Sir Douglas Haig's Dispatch published June 15.
- Major and Bt. Lieut.-Colonel (temporary Brigadier-General) C. H. HARTINGTON, D.S.O., was promoted on June 3 to Brevet Colonel.

The following officers were awarded the Military Cross on June 3, 1916—

- Second Lieut. A. L. S. THOMSON, 1st Battalion.  
Captain (temporary Major) HENRY JOHN DUNCAN, 5th Battalion.  
Lieut. (temporary Captain) WALTER L. OWEN, 5th Battalion.  
Captain J. G. THOMPSON, 7th Battalion.  
Second Lieut. (temporary Captain), L. G. D. HUTCHISON, 8th Battalion.  
Lieut. (temporary Captain) ROBERT DUNCAN CUNNINGHAM, 10th Battalion.  
Second Lieut. (temporary Captain) ALEX GIFFORD, 10th Battalion.  
Temporary Captain HAROLD JOHNSON, 11th Service Battalion.  
Second Lieut. F. EVERARD BOUNDY, 1st Battalion, attached to 17th.  
Captain GEO. WIGRAM DUNDAS ALLAN, Special Reserve of R.F.C.  
Temporary Captain ARTHUR DE BELS ADAM, 18th Service Battalion.

---

## Supplementary List of Honours

---

The following officers associated with the 1st Battalion have won the Military Cross, *vide* the *London Gazette* of June 26.

Lieut. (temporary Captain) ROLAND GRIMSTON TUDOR.

Second Lieut. RAYMOND HEAD, Special Reserve (attached 1st Battalion).

Second Lieut. RAYMOND PERRY (12th) attached 1st Battalion.

Temporary Second Lieut. ERNEST REGINALD LAST.

The following honours were also won at various dates—

Captain DENNIS MALCOLM KING was awarded the Military Cross May 2, 1916.

Major (temporary Lieut.-Colonel) W. R. PINWELL was promoted Brevet Colonel for distinguished service in the field May 2, 1916.

Temporary Second Lieut. THOS. ELLIOT CAIRNES SHEARMAN, 12th Battalion (attached 61/1 Trench Mortar Battery), was awarded the Distinguished Conduct Order.

"For conspicuous gallantry and skill. After marking down the enemy's mortars from our front line, he went back to his guns under heavy fire and directed their fire. He was wounded later in a gallant attempt to rescue a sergeant who had been buried," May 16, 1916.

Temporary Second Lieut. LESLIE MORRISON, 15th Reserve Battalion, attached to the 7th Lancashire Fusiliers, was awarded the Distinguished Service Order.

"For conspicuous gallantry when in charge of grenadiers in attacking and capturing a new crater. The enemy counter-attacked, and drove our parties back, but Second Lieut. MORRISON led his grenadiers forward again and recaptured the position," March 16, 1916.

Second Lieut. (temporary Captain) FREDERICK JOHN FITZJAMES CULLINAN, The King's (Liverpool Regiment), attached to the 9th Battalion the Duke of Wellington's (West Riding) Regiment, also received the Order.

"For conspicuous good work during operations. He kept his men well in hand, and sent in information of great value. He displayed great power of leadership," March 30, 1916.

Temporary Second Lieut. HUGH ALEXANDER SMALL, 16th (attached 20th Battalion), was awarded the Military Cross.

"For conspicuous gallantry during a heavy bombardment by the enemy. He displayed great coolness, helped to dress the wounded, and, after being himself covered with earth by the explosion of a shell, continued his work till all the wounded had been removed."

Lance-Corporal T. SMITH, 20th Battalion, secured the Distinguished Conduct Medal.

"For conspicuous gallantry. Though wounded by shrapnel during a bombardment, he carried a wounded man on his back into safety, returned and assisted to carry two others. He refused to have his own wound dressed till all the other wounded men had been cleared. He set a fine example throughout the bombardment."

---

## *Supplementary List of Honours*

---

The following N.C.O. and men were awarded the Distinguished Conduct Medal, the announcements appearing in April, May and June  
Company Sergeant-Major **BAKER**, 1st Battalion.

"For consistent good work since the commencement of the campaign. He has taken a gallant part in every action in which his battalion has been engaged, and has proved himself a cool and capable leader."

Sergeant **W. GREENALL**, 1st Battalion.

"For consistent good work since the commencement of the campaign. On one occasion he brought up ammunition under very heavy machine-gun and shell fire. Two men only out of twenty got through unwounded. On another occasion he gained valuable information as to the situation by advancing under very heavy fire."

Company Sergeant-Major **J. HODGE**, 7th Battalion, T.F.

"For consistent good work and devotion to duty under all circumstances in the face of the enemy."

Lance-Sergeant **R. BOLD**, 7th Battalion.

"When out with a wiring party this N.C.O. showed conspicuous gallantry in assisting back to our trenches two men of his party who had been wounded," April 15, 1916.

Sergeant **W. McCLELLAND**, 8th Battalion (Liverpool Irish).

"For conspicuous gallantry during a raid on the enemy's trenches. He had previously cut the enemy's wire. He led an attack, accounted for two of the enemy with his revolver and generally set a fine example."

Company Sergeant-Major **P. P. BYRNE**, 9th Battalion, T.F.

"For conspicuous gallantry during an attack. He organised and led a bomb attack and has shown great ingenuity and daring when reconnoitring."

Lance-Corporal **A. COHEN**, 18th Battalion.

"For conspicuous gallantry. When an enemy bomb fell in the trench he rushed forward and detonated the fuse with his feet, thus stopping the explosion of the bomb and saving several casualties."

Company Sergeant-Major (acting Sergeant-Major) **J. MACKIE**, 12th Battalion.

"For conspicuous gallantry. During a heavy bombardment by the enemy he moved fearlessly about to places of the greatest danger. He has done fine work on patrol and on one occasion dispersed with bombs an enemy working party."

Private **W. R. MITCHELL**, 1st Battalion.

"For conspicuous gallantry. During a raid on an enemy sap the raiding party were discovered and bombed, some of them being wounded. Private Mitchell at once jumped into the sap, bombing the enemy and holding them back until the wounded had been carried into safety."

The following N.C.O. and men were awarded the Military Medal, June 3, 1916.

Sergeant **A. J. BURKE**, 8th Battalion.

Private **W. F. CROWE**, 8th Battalion.

Private **F. W. FUSSELL**, 8th Battalion.

---

## *Supplementary List of Honours*

---

Private A. TURNBULL, 9th Battalion.  
Private W. G. WILLIAMS, 9th Battalion.  
Private J. S. PARKINSON, 10th Battalion.  
Sergeant W. M. HOLDEN, 12th Service Battalion.  
Private A. BROWN, 12th Service Battalion.  
Sergeant J. COWAN, 20th Service Battalion.  
Sergeant J. H. CRIBBIN, 20th Service Battalion.

The following officers, N.C.O. and men of the 1st Battalion were mentioned in Sir Douglas Haig's Dispatch published on June 15, "for gallant and distinguished conduct in the field."

Temporary Lieut. W. H. COVELL (temporary Captain).  
Captain A. D. DERVICHE-JONES (Special Reserve).  
Captain J. H. McERVEL (attached Manchester Regiment).  
Second Lieut. K. J. M. BAINES (Special Reserve).  
Lieut. F. L. HUGHES (Special Reserve).  
Temporary Second Lieut. E. R. LAST.  
Sergeant-Major J. ROGERS.  
Sergeant H. G. ROSE (died of wounds).  
Private J. SUMNER.

The following Territorial officers, N.C.O. and men were also mentioned in Sir Douglas Haig's Dispatch for "gallant and distinguished conduct in the field."

Lieut.-Col. J. J. SHUTE, D.S.O., 5th Battalion.  
Second Lieut. (temporary Lieutenant) W. A. DIMOLINE (Infantry Signalling Officer), 5th Battalion.  
Battalion Quartermaster-Sergeant A. T. SMITH, 5th Battalion.  
Sergeant-Major W. CLARKE, 5th Battalion.  
Captain J. B. MCKAIG, 6th Battalion.  
Lieut. H. S. BARRETT, 6th Battalion.  
Second Lieut. W. R. BROWNELL, 6th Battalion.  
Regimental Quartermaster-Sergeant W. R. WARD, 6th Battalion.  
Colour-Sergeant-Major C. TANNER, 6th Battalion.  
Captain (temporary Major) J. A. ECKES, 7th Battalion.  
Lieut. (temporary Captain) J. C. PATERSON, 7th Battalion.  
Temporary Captain E. D. H. STOCKER (Lieutenant), Wellington Regiment, New Zealand, 7th Battalion.  
Quartermaster or Hon. Lieut. W. JOHNSON, 7th Battalion.  
Company Quartermaster-Sergeant R. WITTER, 7th Battalion.  
Colour-Sergeant-Major A. S. BREBNER, 7th Battalion.  
Sergeant W. KEEGAN, 7th Battalion.  
Major (temporary Lieut.-Colonel) E. A. FAGAN, Indian Army, attached to 8th Battalion.  
Lieut. (temporary Major) H. LEECH, 8th Battalion.  
Second Lieut. (temporary Captain) G. S. BRIGHTEN (Adjutant), 8th Battalion.  
Second Lieut. (temporary Captain) E. M. MURPHY, 8th Battalion.  
Second Lieut. (temporary Captain) J. P. CASTLE, 8th Battalion.  
Second Lieut. (temporary Captain), E. F. ORCHARD, 8th Battalion.  
Second Lieut. (temporary Captain) B. W. HOWROYD, 9th Battalion.  
Second Lieut. (temporary Lieut.) J. H. HALLIWELL, 9th Battalion.

---

## *Supplementary List of Honours*

---

Regimental Sergeant-Major W. MILLER, 9th Battalion.  
Colour-Sergeant-Major C. WARD, 9th Battalion.  
Sergeant A. JONES, 9th Battalion.  
Sergeant J. E. SMITH, 9th Battalion.  
Private W. J. HANNA, 9th Battalion.  
Major (temporary Lieut.-Colonel) J. R. DAVIDSON, C.M.G., 10th Battalion.  
Second Lieut. (temporary Lieut.) B. ARKLE, Adjutant, 10th Battalion.  
Quartermaster or Hon. Lieut. A. C. JACK, 10th Battalion.  
Regimental Sergeant-Major S. JENNINGS, 10th Battalion.

The following officers, N.C.O. and men belonging to the Service Battalions were likewise mentioned in Sir Douglas Haig's Dispatch.

Temporary Captain G. E. A. BROWNE (Adjutant), 11th Service Battalion.

Sergeant A. GILLIVER, 11th Service Battalion.

Corporal J. CORLESS, 11th Service Battalion.

Lance-Corporal W. COATES, 12th Service Battalion.

Lance-Corporal B. RUSSELL, 12th Service Battalion.

Private R. W. JACKSON, 12th Service Battalion.

Temporary Lieut.-Colonel (Hon. Lieut.-Colonel) A. St. H. GIBBONS, retired, Special Reserve, 13th Service Battalion.

Temporary Major G. ROLLO, 17th Service Battalion.

Regimental Sergeant-Major W. GRAY, 17th Service Battalion.

Sergeant C. D. STIRLING, 17th Service Battalion.

Major (temporary Lieut.-Colonel) E. H. TROTTER, D.S.O., Grenadier Guards, 18th Service Battalion.

Captain (temporary Lieut.-Colonel) L. S. DENHAM (Reserve of officers), 19th Service Battalion.

Temporary Major R. K. MORRISON, 19th Service Battalion.

Regimental Sergeant-Major J. H. WESTON, 19th Service Battalion.

Colour-Sergeant-Major G. E. USHER, 19th Service Battalion.

Major (temporary Lieut.-Colonel) H. W. COBHAM (Reserve of officers, retired I.A.), 20th Service Battalion.

### SPECIAL ITEMS.

Sir Douglas Haig, in his Dispatch published May 19, 1916, says—

“ While many other units have done excellent work during the period under review, the following have been specially brought to my notice for good work in carrying out or repelling local attacks and raids.”

Amongst the battalions which find a place in the list are—

4th (extra Reserve) Battalion, the King's Liverpool Regiment.  
8th Battalion (Liverpool Irish).

In his Dispatch dated March 1, 1916, Major-General Sir M. Dobell, K.C.B., commanding the Allied forces in the Cameroons, gives a list of officers, N.C.O. and men he desires to draw attention to “ for distinguished and meritorious service.” The following name finds a place in the list—

Captain C. H. DINNEN, The King's (Liverpool Regiment), killed.

---

## *Supplementary List of Honours*

---

The following particulars are extracted from the *Gazette* of June 24, 1916.

The Military Cross was conferred on the following officers.

Second Lieut. HUGH ALEXANDER SMALL, 16th Battalion (attached to the 20th Battalion).

"For conspicuous gallantry during a heavy bombardment by the enemy. He displayed great coolness, helped to dress the wounded, and, after being himself covered with earth by the explosion of a shell, continued his work until all the wounded had been removed."

Lieutenant (temporary Captain) ROLAND GRIMSTON TUDOR, 1st Battalion.

Second Lieut. RAYMOND EVELYN HEAD, Special Reserve (attached to 1st Battalion).

Temporary Second Lieut. ERNEST REGINALD LAST, 1st Battalion.

Temporary Second Lieut. RAYMOND PERRY, 12th Battalion (attached 1st Battalion).

The following N.C.O. and men were awarded the Distinguished Conduct Medal.

Company Sergeant-Major J. HODGE, 7th Battalion.

"For consistent good work and devotion to duty under all circumstances in face of the enemy."

Private W. R. MITCHELL, 1st Battalion.

"For conspicuous gallantry. During a raid on an enemy sap the raiding party were discovered and bombed, some of them being wounded. Private Mitchell at once jumped into the sap, bombing the enemy and holding them back until the wounded had been carried away into safety."

Lance-Corporal T. SMITH, 20th Battalion.

"For conspicuous gallantry. Though wounded by shrapnel during a bombardment, he carried a wounded man back into safety, returned, and assisted to carry away two others. He refused to have his own wound dressed till all the other wounded men had been cleared. He set a fine example throughout the bombardment."

The following appears in a special supplement of the *London Gazette*, dated August 7, 1916.

### AWARDED THE VICTORIA CROSS.

Private ARTHUR HERBERT PROCTER, Liverpool Regiment, T.F.

"For most conspicuous bravery. Private Procter, noticing some movement on the part of two wounded men who were lying in the open in full view of the enemy at about seventy-five yards in front of our trenches, went out, on his own initiative, and, though heavily fired at, ran and crawled to the two men, got them under cover of a small bank, dressed their wounds, and after cheering them with the promise of rescue after dark, and leaving with them some of his clothing for warmth, regained our trenches, again being heavily fired at. At dusk both men were brought in alive."





---

*Appendix C*

---

LIST OF OFFICERS  
SERVING IN  
**THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL  
REGIMENT)**  
AT THE BEGINNING OF THE SECOND  
YEAR OF THE GREAT WAR

---

*This list is reprinted with the sanction of the War Office from the Army List of September 1915 (corrected to August 31st, 1915). By kind permission of the Controller of His Majesty's Stationary Office the official stereos have been used.*



939	970	971	972
-----	-----	-----	-----

# THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL REGIMENT). Regimental District No. 2. [No. 2 District.]

The White Horse within the Garter. "Nec aspera terrent." In each of the four corners the Royal Orphar ensigned with the Imperial Crown. The Sphinx, superscribed "Egypt."  
"Blenheim," "Ramillies," "Oudenarde," "Malplaquet," "Dettingen," "Martinique, 1803," "Niagara," "Delhi, 1857," "Lucknow," "Palwar Kotal," "Afghanistan, 1878-80," "Burma, 1884-87," "Delance of Ladysmith," "South Africa, 1899-1902."

Agents—Messrs. Cox & Co.

## Regular and Special Reserve Battalions.

Uniform—Scarlet. Footings—Blue.

1st Bn. } (6th Foot) | 2nd Bn. } (2nd E. Lancashire Mil.) | Depot | Seaforth.  
2nd " } | 4th " } (2nd E. Lancashire Mil.) | Record Office | Preston.

## Territorial Force Battalions.

5th Bn. 55, St. Anne Street, Liverpool. 8th Bn. 74, Shaw Street, Liverpool.  
6th Bn. Prince's Park Barracks, Upper Warwick 9th " 57, 58 and 61, Everton Road, Liverpool.  
7th " 59, Park Street, Bootle. 10th " 7, Fraser Street, Liverpool.

Service Battalions.. 11th Bn. | 12th Bn. | 13th Bn. | 14th Bn. | 15th Bn. | 16th Bn. | 17th Bn. | 18th Bn. | 19th Bn. | 20th Bn.  
2nd Reserve Battalions... 1st Bn. | 2nd Bn. | Local Reserve Battalions... 21st Bn. | 22nd Bn.

1st Dock Battalion

1st Garrison Battalion

Volunteer Rifle Corps ... .. Isle of Man, Douglas.

## Allied Regiment of the Australian Commonwealth.

8th Australian Infantry Regiment.

Colonel " " " " G. Olive, Gen. M. H., ret. pay, p.s.c. " " " 30Dec.08  
Officer Commanding Depot " " Tripp, Bt. Col. A. W. H., Lt. Col. Res. of Off. " " 5Aug.14  
Cotton, Maj. S. L., ret. pay " 2Nov.14 Adam, Maj. H. W. D., 3 Bn. Bord. R. 28Dec.14  
Loxfield, Capt. J. M., ret. pay " 27Oct.14  
Adjutant " " Edridge, Maj. C. S., Res. of Off. " " 5Aug.14  
Quarter-Master " " Clarke, Qr.-Mr. (hon. capt.) D., ret. pay " " 5Aug.14

## 1st and 2nd Battalions. (Regular.)

### Lt.-Colonels.

3Crockett, G. D. 17Feb.12  
1Carter, E. C. M. " 17Feb.04  
C.M.G. (F) 26Oct.14

### Majors.

Stewart, R. S.,  
p.s.c. (L) 17Feb.04  
1Seavenson, O. J. 17Feb.08  
bt. N. col. 18Feb.15  
2Hyslop, F. 12Dec.08  
s. Jones, L. M. " 18Sept.06  
D.S.O. 17Feb.12  
(11) Bailey, V. T. 17Feb.12  
2Leader, L. F. 20Oct.12  
s. Harrington, C. H.,  
D.S.O., p.s.c. 16Apr.14  
bt. N. col. 18Feb.15  
1Sheppard, T. W. 26Oct.14

### Captains.

s.o. Pinner, W. R., p.s.c., s. 21Mar.00  
s. Fox, R. P. 21Mar.00  
s.o. Hawthorn, G. M. P. 21Mar.00  
2Howard-Vyse, G. A. 18Sept.00  
r. Potter, H. C. (F) 11Dec.01  
r. Jones, E. C. R. 11Jan.01  
2Gauntlett, V. O. 20May.06  
Schuster, L. R. 14Apr.10  
Wheat, J. 14Apr.10  
s.o. Hall, E. E. A. 4July10  
1Grouse, N. B. C. 8. 4July10  
s. Hudson, P. 4July10  
bt. maj. 18Feb.15  
s. Norris, S. E. 4July10

### Captains—contd.

2Hesdine, R. H. 4July10  
24Sept.10  
s. Yates, C. M. 5Aug.10  
14Dec.10  
(3) Beeman, S. W. 29Feb.12  
19Oct.12  
2Wright, H. L. 24Apr.12  
s.o. O'Flynn, D. R. C. D. 4June12  
s. Brook, T. F. 2June12  
2Uniaske, J. B. 14Aug.13  
(1) Furber, M. Res.  
of Off. 9Aug.14  
s.o. 2Bulkeley, E. B. M. 24Sept.14  
King, D. M. 10Oct.14  
2Kinner, G. E. M. 10Oct.14  
2Harden, F. G. 21Oct.14  
r. Browne, J. H. L. 21Oct.14  
1Scott-Tucker,  
D. G. H. 26Oct.14  
1Goff, C. A. 27Oct.14

### Lieutenants.

2Trevor, C. P. 16May12  
18Natth, P. C. 17Nov.18  
2Levick, A. U. 1Jan.14  
1Horton, L. E. L. 4Feb.14  
18Synge, W. A. T. 4Feb.14  
1Ryan, J. H. A. 5Aug.14  
1Tudor, R. G. 18Sept.14  
2Hannay, W. A. 10Oct.14  
2Towers, G. M. 30Oct.14  
(1) Derriche-Jones,  
A. D. 3Bn. 17Jan.15  
(1) Hope, J. P. 3Bn. 21Oct.14  
2Tate, A. R. W. 21Oct.14  
2Cross, E. C. 26Oct.14  
1Meredith, W. M. 26Oct.14  
s.o. Marplebeck, G. W.,  
D.S.O. 27Oct.14  
1Wrixley, T. 27Oct.14  
s.o. Phillips, C. J. 1Nov.14  
(1) Francis, E. L., 3Bn. 11Mar.15  
Willis, R. 7Jan.15  
1Elliot, H. 12Jan.15  
1Miller, G. W. 12Jan.15  
(1) Cooper, E. G., 3Bn. 11Mar.15  
s. Kynaston, N. E. V. 11Mar.15  
(1) Roaling, D. W.,  
Spec. Res. —  
(1) Nichols, A. R.,  
Spec. Res. (temp.  
capt. 18 June 15) —  
(1) Hutchison, W. M., 3Bn. 18Jan.15  
(1) King, F. L., 3Bn. 18Jan.15  
(1) Roberts, F. J., 3Bn. 18Jan.15  
(temp. capt. 18 June 15)  
(1) Rich, J. S., 3Bn. 18Jan.15  
(1) Nichols, A. R.,  
Spec. Res. (temp.  
capt. 18 June 15) —  
(1) Hutchison, W. M., 3Bn. 18Jan.15  
(1) King, F. L., 3Bn. 18Jan.15  
(1) Roberts, F. J., 3Bn. 18Jan.15  
(temp. capt. 18 June 15)  
(1) Rich, J. S., 3Bn. 18Jan.15

### 2nd Lieutenants—contd.

2Holland, G. W. 7Nov.14  
2Collins, E. 7Nov.14  
2Kent, E. 7Nov.14  
2Parkin, T. H. 7Nov.14  
(1) Harvey, W., 3Bn. 29Nov.14  
1Kent, H. 29Nov.14  
1Shier, M. B. 3Dec.14  
1Robinson, W. E.  
(Instnl. Duties) 4Dec.14  
1Harrison, A. W. 14Dec.14  
(1) Pratt, J. A., 3Bn. 5Jan.15  
s.o. Ware, D. C. 5Jan.15  
1East, B. R. (temp. capt.  
18 June 15) 3Mar.15  
1Carlton, G. F. 3Mar.15  
1Harris, E. R. 3Mar.15  
(temp.) 3Mar.15  
(4) 1Trushaw, W. W. 3Mar.15  
(1) Marsh, N. C., 16Bn. 15Bn.  
1Baillon, G. W., 15Bn. 17Mar.15  
(3) Hewson, A. F. W. 17Mar.15  
1McConville, J. 5Apr.15  
1Brown, P. 9Apr.15  
1Hutson, F. R. 9Apr.15  
(temp.) 9Apr.15  
2Rogers, A. G. 17June15  
1Thomson, A. L. 8. 20June15  
1Jefferson, E. B. 20June15  
1McEvel, J. H. 27June15  
(1) Horbury, G. S. 10July15  
(temp.) 10July15  
(3) Tiedall, J. T. St. C. 14July15  
(1) Green, C. B. 14July15  
(temp.) 14July15  
(4) Waring, J. L. 24July15  
(temp.) 24July15  
(1) Lomas, J. H. 24July15  
(temp.) 24July15  
(3) Bannatyne, N. J. 11Aug.15  
(temp.) 11Aug.15

### Adjutants.

2Alden, C. E. E. G. 4July15



975	976	976a	976b
-----	-----	------	------

**THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL REGIMENT)—(Regt., Dist. No. 8)—contd.**

**5th Bn.—contd.**

**Lieutenants.**

**1 Longbottom, W.**  
Hawkes, P. W. (H)  
(\*Capt. 1 Nov. 14)  
23 Nov. 09  
**1 Evans, W. L.** (\*Capt.  
30 Sept. 14) 13 Nov. 10  
**1 Duncan, H. J.** (\*Capt.  
30 Sept. 14) 13 May 11  
**1 Ellis, C. (H)** 13 Jan. 12  
**1 Oakleton, W. H. (H)**  
(\*Capt. 1 May 15) 29 May 12  
**Palmer, E. B.** (\*Capt.  
2 Nov. 14) 19 June 12  
**Edwards, G. S. @**  
(\*Capt. 1 May 15)  
22 Aug. 14  
**1 Owen, W. L.** (\*Capt.  
18 June 16) 22 A. 5-14  
**Read, H. D.** (\*Capt.  
1 May 15) 19 Sept. 14  
**2 Moore, W. H.** 14 May 15  
29 May 12

**2nd Lieutenants.**

**1 Bower, R.** (\*Lt. 30  
Sept. 14) 3 June 12  
**1 Keet, H. G.** (\*Capt.  
1 May 15) 17 June 14  
**2 Furber, R. L.** Adjt.  
(\*Capt. 1 May 15)  
23 June 14  
**2 Ambler, P.** (\*Capt.  
1 May 15) 26 June 14  
**1 Dimoline, W. A.** 3 July 14  
**1 Macdonald, W. K.**  
8 Aug. 14  
**1 Richardson, G. F.**  
22 Aug. 14  
**1 Jarrett, A.** (\*Lt.  
30 June 15) 22 Aug. 14  
**1 Bartlett, A. G.** 22 Aug. 14  
**1 Meade, M.** (\*Lt.  
30 Apr. 15) 22 Aug. 14  
**1 Riley, P.** (\*Lt. 1  
May 15) 19 Sept. 14  
**1 Mellor, G. E.** 18 Sept. 14  
**1 Saunders, W. G., c.c.**  
30 Oct. 14  
**Harrison, J. F.** (\*Lt.  
1 May 15) 19 Oct. 14  
**2 Williams, P.** (\*Lt. 1  
May 15) 19 Oct. 14  
**2 Giles, H. N.** (\*May  
1 Apr. 15) 19 Oct. 14  
**2 Hylop, R. M.** (\*Lt.  
May 15) 19 Oct. 14  
**2 Taylor, G. L.** (\*Lt.  
1 May 15) 19 Oct. 14  
**Bussell, A. V.** (\*Lt.  
1 May 15) 20 Oct. 14  
**2 Glover, F. H.** 21 Oct. 14  
**1 Rowe, T.** 21 Oct. 14  
**1 Russell, R. F. L.** 21 Oct. 14  
**2 Porritt, J. T.** (\*Lt.  
1 May 15) 21 Oct. 14  
**2 Buckley, W. M.** (\*Lt.  
1 May 15) 21 Oct. 14

**2nd Lieutenants—contd.**

**1 Buttery, G. C.** 2 Nov. 14  
**1 Starkey, W. E.** 2 Nov. 14  
**1 Hudson, C. N.** 10 Nov. 14  
**1 Reid, A.** 10 Nov. 14  
**2 Birchall, C.** 26 Nov. 14  
**2 Craig, W. Y.** 26 Nov. 14  
**2 James, E. G.** 13 Feb. 15  
**2 Taylor, O. A.** 13 Feb. 15  
**2 Cox, H. B.** 20 Feb. 15  
**2 Miller, N. H.** 2 Mar. 15  
**2 Nixon, H. C.** 2 Mar. 15  
**2 Leslie, J. G.** 2 Mar. 15  
**1 McIntosh, D. B.** 6 Mar. 15  
**1 Forster, E. S.** 12 Mar. 15  
**1 Bond, D. G.** 12 Mar. 15  
**1 Denning, J. V.** 12 Mar. 15  
**2 Taylor, O. A.** 17 Apr. 15  
**2 Heard, C. O.** 2 May 15  
**2 Stott, L. L.** 14 May 15  
**2 Mallpage, E.** 21 May 15  
**1 Benjamin, T. J.** 3 June 15  
**1 Morris, T. T.** 16 June 15  
**1 Levy, L. W.** 16 June 15  
**1 Widdows, J. E.** 27 June 15  
**1 Myers, L. E.** 13 July 15  
**2 Pownall, E.** 23 July 15  
**1 Kennett, W. A.** 8 Aug. 15  
**1 Bescoby, H.** 8 Aug. 15  
**1 Hughes, D. L.** 19 Aug. 15

**Inst. of Musk.**

**1 Grindley, D. R.,**  
capt. 6 Feb. 14

**Adjutants.**

**1 McEriscoe, G. S.,**  
Capt. Woc. 29 Nov. 12  
**2 Furber, R. L., 2nd**  
Lt. (\*Capt.) 1 Mar. 15

**Quarter-Masters.**

**1 McBurnett, W., hon.**  
M. 1 July 12  
**2 Anderson, J. E. B.,**  
hon. M. 10 Nov. 14

**Medical Officers.**

**Anderson, Capt. E. L.,**  
M. B. R. A. M. C.  
(T.F.) (attd.) (Med.  
Offr., A. Force,  
Nigeria,  
1 Jan. 14)  
7 Apr. 10  
**Donnell, Capt. J. H.,**  
M. B. R. A. M. C.  
(T.F.) (attd.) 2 May 12  
2 Nov. 02

**Chaplains.**

**Liverpool, Rt. Rev. F.**  
**J., Lord Bishop of**  
**D.D., Chapl. 1st**  
**Class (T.F.) (attd.)**  
1 Apr. 02  
**Ainslie, Rev. Canon**  
**R. M., M.A., TD.**  
Chapl. 1st Class  
(T.F.) (attd.) 19 Dec. 1  
19 Dec. 9  
**Gregson, Rev. W. J.**  
(R.C.), Chapl. 4th  
Class (T.F.) (attd.)  
21 May 15

**Attached.**

**2 Whitehouse, 2nd Lt.**  
**H. H., T.F. Res.,**  
**2 North, 2nd Lt. F. J.,**  
**T.F. Res.**  
(Uniform—Green.  
Facing—Black.)

**6th (Rifle)**  
**Battalion.**  
**(Territorial.)**

"South Africa, 1900-01."  
Prince's Park Barracks,  
Upper Warwick Street,  
Liverpool.

**Hon. Colonel.**

**McBurnett, Gen. Sir**  
**C. J., K.C.B.,**  
**R.O.V.O., ret. pay**  
**Col. R. Ir. Inf.**  
22 Apr. 10

**Lt.-Colonels.**

**1p. Davison, H., 2d** 2 Mar. 15

**Majors.**

**1 Harrison, E. J.** 19 May 15  
**1 Wainwright, E.**  
4 Feb. 15  
**2 McFletcher, W. A. L.**  
**D.S.O. (Hon. Lt. in**  
**Army, 10 July 01)**  
**(\*Lt.-Col. 6 Aug. 15)**  
27 Apr. 15

**Captains.**

**1p.s. McWedgwood, B. H.**  
25 Mar. 02  
**1p.s. Bennett, E. W. E.**  
22 June 10  
**1p.s. Turner, W. A.** 23 July 11  
**Beasley, J. G. B., c.**  
19 May 12  
**1p.s. Westby, G. H. A. @**  
1 Nov. 12  
**1p.s. McKaig, J. B.** 14 May 12  
**2 Temple, J. H.** (\*Maj.  
7 Nov. 14) 19 Aug. 14  
1 Nov. 02  
**2 Wilson, C. W.** 20 Oct. 14

**Captains—contd.**

**2 Clarke, W. R.** 9 Nov. 14  
**2 Rogers, G. P.** 12 Nov. 14  
**2 Fletcher, G. L. (Hon.**  
**Lt. in Army 25**  
**July 01)** 13 Nov. 14  
**2 Miller, A. T., c.** 18 Nov. 14  
**1 Buckley, M. C. G.**  
13 Mar. 15  
**McBarnett, J., Adjt.**  
27 Apr. 15  
**1 French, J. E.** 5 May 15

**Lieutenants.**

**Broad, W. H.** (\*Capt.  
31 Oct. 14) 23 June 10  
**1 Gordon, S. E.** 19 May 12  
**1 Stewart, H.** 13 July 12  
**1 Higgin, W. W. @** 14 May 12  
**2 Dobell, E. L.** 12 Aug. 14  
**1 Barrett, H. S.** 8 Sept. 14  
**2 Parker, P. G. F.** (\*Capt.  
17 May 15) 7 Nov. 14  
**1 Herschell, E.** (\*Capt.  
16 Nov. 14) 12 Nov. 14  
**1 Birkett, G.** (\*Capt.  
14 May 15) 12 Nov. 14  
**2 Jones, W. J.** 12 Nov. 14  
**2 Howard, W. E.** 12 Nov. 14  
**2 Gilling, F. G.** (\*Capt.  
27 May 15) 12 Nov. 14  
**2 Royston, J. W.**  
12 Nov. 14  
**2 Brocklebank, E. E. R.,**  
**Adjt.** (\*Capt. 12 Mar.  
15) 12 Nov. 14  
**1 Oliver, E. L.** 12 Mar. 15  
**1p.s. Todd, M., late**  
**Capt.** 5 May 15  
**1 Bardale, F. S. E.** 5 May 15

**2nd Lieutenants.**

**2 Tenhouse, A. H.**  
(\*Lt. Nov. 14) 1 Nov. 11  
**2 Wilson, H. K.** (\*Maj.  
7 Nov. 14) 19 Aug. 14  
**2 Holland, L. M.**  
(\*Capt. 17 June 15)  
12 Aug. 14  
**1 Blackledge, G. G.** 28 Sept. 14  
**2 Wurzburg, C. E. A.**  
**(Capt. 7 Nov. 14)** 22 Sept. 14  
**1 Hughes, G.** 16 Oct. 14  
**1 Ronald, N. B.** 16 Oct. 14  
**2 Rome, T. R.** 27 Oct. 14  
**1 Tyson, E. H.** 27 Oct. 14

THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL REGIMENT)—(Regt. Dist. No. 8)—*contd.*6th Bn.—*contd.*

**2nd Lieutenants—contd.**  
 2 May, L. G. (\*Lt. 17 May 15) 4Nov.14  
 2Barrow, H. E. (\*Capt. 17 June 15) 4Nov.14  
 2Eccles, A. G. (\*Capt. 17 June 15) 4Nov.14  
 2Hathbone, R. R. 4Nov.14  
 2Houlton, R. H. S. 12Nov.14  
 1 Davidson, W. H. B. 12Nov.14  
 1Adam, E. C. 12Nov.14  
 2Moon, J. (\*Capt. 9 June 15) 29Jan.15  
 1Ruckley, E. K. 20Nov.14  
 2McClellan, W. 21Dec.14  
 1Hughes, R. V. (\*Capt. 17 June 15) 27Jan.15  
 2Cameron, C. W. 28Jan.15  
 2Howling, F. C. 1Feb.15  
 2Hobell, A. T. 10Feb.15  
 1Brownell, W. E. 6Mar.15  
 1Warburton, A. 6Mar.15  
 2Oxenbould, E. H. 6Mar.15  
 2Burton, G. B. 12Mar.15  
 2Giffey, W. 23Mar.15  
 2Allen, L. S. 9Apr.15  
 2Stewart, C. T. 8Apr.15  
 2Wyatt, C. T. A. 14May15  
 2Burton, K. H. 14May15  
 2Withers, H. R. 21May15  
 2Mather, P. D. 4June15  
 2Hutchinson, A. 7June15  
 2Paul, J. R. 12June15  
 2Alcock, P. F. 12June15  
 1Feb.15  
 Collings, W. R. 21June15  
 Bateson, W. 21June15  
 Huntley, P. O. J. 26June15  
 Hasell, J. T. 3July15  
 Broad, A. H. 6Aug.15  
 Eastwood, D. 19Aug.15

**Adjutants.**

1Teall, G. H., Capt. Linc. R. 9Jan.14  
 2Barnett, J. (\*Capt. 2Apr.15  
 Brocklebank, E. R., Lt. (\*Capt.) 10July15

**Quarter-Masters.**

1Goulding, E. S., hon. capt. 29Jan.15  
 2Williams, W., hon. Lt. 20May15

**Medical Officers.**

1p. Martin, Maj. J. G., M.B., R.A.M.C. (T.F.) (att'd.) 26Oct.15  
 Livingston, Lt. J., F.R.C.S. (Edin.) R.A.M.C. (T.F.) (att'd.) 23May14  
 Atkins, Lt. T. R. W., R.A.M.C. (T.F.) (att'd.) 22Dec.14

**Chaplains.**

Lichfield, Rt. Rev. J. A., Lord Bishop of D.D., Chapl. 1st Class (T.F.) (att'd.) 16May15  
 Wakeford, Rev. J., M.A., B.D., Chapl. 4th Class (T.F.) (att'd.) 10May15  
 Horan, Rev. F. S., M.A., Chapl. 4th Class (T.F.) (att'd.) 1Jun.15  
 [Uniform—Green, Facing—Scarlet.]

Cadet Unit Affiliated.  
 Merchant Taylors School (Crosby) Cadet Corps.

**7th Battalion. (Territorial.)**

"South Africa, 1900-02."  
 90, Park Street, Bootle.

**Lt.-Colonels.**

1p. Stott, W. H., 20 1Jan.15  
 2Vernon, T. T. (Maj. ret. T.F.) 24Oct.14  
 2Slater, J. W., VD 28July15  
 16Nov.12

**Majors.**

1Hemelry, P. H. (\*Lt.-Col. 22 May 15) 12May15

**Captains.**

1p. Bean, C. A. 8May15  
 1p. Marriott, S. O. (H) 10Feb.06  
 1p. Ecken, J. A. 14Apr.05  
 1Harvey, J. 13May15  
 1p. Chandler, E. A. (H) 26Mar.15

1Thompson, J. G. 4July14  
 C. P. Campbell, F. 25Aug.14  
 22Apr.05  
 11Nov.14

2Burnie, J. 2Mar.15  
 2Marsh, J. A. (\*Maj. 6 Apr. 15) 18Nov.14  
 2Murrell, A. H. 26Jan.15

**Lieutenants.**

2Meyer, C. D. (\*Maj. 15 June 15) 1Dec.10  
 1Adams, W. G. 1Dec.10  
 1Alexander, H. G. 27Feb.15  
 1Paterson, J. C. (\*Capt. 15 June 15) 22Aug.14  
 1Pittcauld, W. L. 6Sept.14

2Dawson, T. W. 8Sept.14

1Stocker, E. D. H., Lt. 5 Bn. Wellington Regt., New Zealand, (\*Capt. 15 June 15) 6Sept.14

**2nd Lieutenants.**

1Roper, L. W. 6June15  
 1Shaw, E. 22Dec.15  
 1Mumford, W. C. (\*Capt. 20 June 15) 6Aug.14  
 1Cope, C. (\*Lt. 14 May 15) 6Aug.14  
 1Paton, W. 22Aug.14  
 1Boddy, A. R. (\*Lt. 15 June 15) 22Aug.14  
 1Redding, J. E. 22Aug.14  
 18myth, G. E. G. 8Sept.15

**2nd Lieutenants—contd.**

2Stevens, W. P. (\*Lt. 15 June 15) 8Sept.14  
 1Anderson, K. R. (\*Lt. 16Sept.14  
 1Mottram, O. A. 16Sept.14  
 2Humphrys, R. P. (\*Capt. 15 June 15) 10Oct.14  
 1Oatfield, W. J. (\*Lt. 7 Apr. 15) 10Oct.14  
 1Holland, J. W. T. (\*Lt. 7 Apr. 15) 10Oct.14  
 2Port, S. H. W. (\*Capt. 15 June 15) 10Oct.14  
 1Stephenson, A. T. 10Oct.14

2Jones, A. P. (\*Capt. 15 June 15) 10Oct.14  
 1Brook, E. G. 16Oct.14  
 1Rutherford, L. 26Oct.14

2Vernon, H. D. 11Nov.14  
 2Hammers, W. (\*Capt. 15 June 15) 11Nov.14

2Porter, H. W. (\*Lt. 15 June 15) 11Nov.14  
 1Williams, T. G. 14Dec.14

2Walker, C. H. (\*Lt. 15 June 15) 14Dec.14  
 2Bean, C. A. 13Dec.14

1Chandler, R. A. E. (\*Lt. 1 Jan. 15) 1Jan.15  
 1Nesbitt, R. D. A. (\*Lt. 15 June 15) 8Feb.15

1Watson, H. 9Feb.15  
 2Hodgins, E. C. (\*Lt. 15 June 15) 9Feb.15

1Robinson, E. R. 8Mar.15  
 2Langdon, R. S. (\*Lt. 15 June 15) 8Mar.15

2Swatman, W. W. (\*Lt. 15 June 15) 8Mar.15  
 2Smith, K. E. J. 8Mar.15

2Harrison, W. 12Mar.15  
 1Hopkins, H. O. 20Apr.15  
 1Hilton, J. A. 29Apr.15

2Townshend, A. D. 29Apr.15  
 2Knapp, C. P. C. 29Apr.15

2Bayley, F. A. 29Apr.15  
 2Gandell, H. L. 29Apr.15

2Parker, H. M. D. 29Apr.15  
 2McKay, G. 14May15

2Shelmerdine, A. N. 6Dec.14  
 14May15

Bevir, A. 8July15  
 21Kinckson, J. 26May-5  
 21Bettis, R. N. 2May15

2Shelmerdine, T. H. 6June15  
 Mackenzie, C. A. 27July15  
 1Drakeford, H. 30July15

1Bell, S. J. 28Aug.12

**Adjutants.**

18hute, J. V., Capt. Dorset E. 7Sept.13

**Quarter-Masters.**

1p. Johnson, W., hon. Lt. 2Apr.14  
 1Preston, J., hon. Lt. 26Jan.15

1Bingham, G. (Hon. Lt. in Army 28 Sept. 02) hon. capt. 16June18

**Medical Officers.**

p. Price, Maj. A., R.A.M.C. (T.F.) (att'd.) 22Apr.13  
 2Aug.04

1p. Blumberg, Maj. H., D.A., TD, R.A.M.C. (T.F.) (att'd.) 22July13  
 11July00

**Chaplains.**

Collier, Rev. H. F. S., B.A., Chapl. 4th Class (T.F.) (att'd.) 1Aug.09

**Attached.**

2James, 2nd Lt. W. E., T.F. Res. 26Oct.14  
 2Cowper, 2nd Lt. A. L., T.F. Res. 26Oct.14

2Yeoman, 2nd Lt. E. W., T.F. Res. 26Oct.14  
 2Pybus, 2nd Lt. W., T.F. Res. 26Oct.14

[Uniform—Scarlet, Facing—Blue.]

Cadet Unit affiliated.  
 Southport Cadet Corps.

**8th (Irish) Battalion. (Territorial.)**

"South Africa, 1900-02."  
 74, Shaw Street, Liverpool.

**Hon. Colonel.**

Kennedy, F. G., Earl of, C.V.O. 8Sept.06

**Lt.-Colonels.**

2Cooney, J. A., TD, 3June08  
 1Neale, A. H. C., late Lt. Bedford. 20Nov.14  
 2Rippon, G., Lt.-Col. ret. Ind. Army 28Aug.15  
 24July15

**Majors.**

2McCallagh, J. R. 1Jan.10  
 2Drumfield, A. 4May15

**Captains.**

2p. Carline, J. H. 30Jan.08  
 C. Benson, A. R. (\*Maj. 15 Dec. 14) 6June08

2Meadow, A. H. 16May11  
 2Murphy, F. F. S. 1July13

2Batten, T. L. 4May13  
 2p. Johnson, J. A. S. (\*Lt.-Col. 17June15) 14Nov.14

1Smith, J. J. (\*Maj. 14 Dec. 14) 20May14  
 1Boche, J. A. 20May14

## THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL REGIMENT)—(Regt. Dist. No. 8)—contd.

## 8th Bn.—contd.

## Lieutenants.

3 Harris, S. (\*Capt.  
13 Dec 14) 15 June 10  
2 Murphy, L. A. M. 13 July 13  
1 Williams, G. A. (\*Capt.  
14 Dec 14) 13 July 13  
2 Smitham, J. E. Adj.  
(\*Capt. 14 Dec 14) 15 Nov 13  
1 Keating, R. P. (\*Capt.  
14 Dec 14) 20 May 14  
1 Maier, A. J. P. S.  
(\*Capt. 14 Dec 14) 20 May 14  
1 Sheath, W. A. S.  
(Capt. 14 Dec 14) 20 Aug 14  
15 May 13  
1 Leach, H. (\*Capt.  
20 June 15) \*16 Sept. 14  
1 Forster, H. B. A. (\*Capt.  
26 Jan. 15) \*6 Jan. 15  
1 Jackson, J. R. (late  
Capt. Kitcheners  
Horse) \*1 Aug. 15

## 2nd Lieutenants.

1 Hanley, B. C. 17 Oct. 13  
2 Pickles, E. S. (\*Capt.  
31 Dec 14) 15 Jan 19  
1 Downes, E. L. (\*Lt.  
14 Dec 14) 24 Feb. 13  
1 Traynor, F. J. (\*Lt.  
14 Dec 14) 15 May 13  
1 Murphy, E. M. (\*Capt.  
20 June 15) 15 Sept. 13  
1 Riley, J. H. (\*Capt.  
1 Feb. 15) 8 Sept. 14  
2 Bell, J. (\*Lt. 15 Dec 14) 18 Dec 13  
2 Wylie, W. R. (\*Capt.  
9 July 15) 30 Jan. 14  
1 Willson, C. H. M. (\*Lt.  
26 Jan. 15) 23 Mar. 14  
1 Hutchison, L. G. D.  
(\*Capt. 20 June 15) 16 Sept. 14  
1 Collison, B. R. (\*Capt.  
20 June 15) 28 Sept. 14  
1 Chamberlain, G. H.  
(\*Capt. 20 June 15) 28 Sept. 14  
2 Farrar, T. C. L. 50 Oct. 14  
2 Matthews, J. B. (\*Lt.  
10 May 15) 24 Oct. 14  
1 Bodol, F. E. (\*Lt.  
15 Dec 14) 26 Oct. 14  
1 Brooke, J. N. H. 28 Oct. 14  
2 Wright, H. C. (\*Lt.  
15 Dec 14) 27 Oct. 14  
1 Lopp, E. P. A. 20 Nov. 14  
2 Mayhew, A. H. (\*Capt.  
2 Feb. 15) 10 Nov. 14  
1 Mahon, J. H. (\*Capt.  
20 June 15) 11 Nov. 14  
2 Neale, A. K. H. (\*Lt.  
14 Dec 14) 14 Nov. 14  
1 Duder, H. B., Adj.  
(\*Capt. 8 July 15) 17 Nov. 14  
2 Levene, N. N. 17 Nov. 14  
1 Brighton, G. S.  
Adj. (\*Capt. 10  
June 15) 17 Nov. 14

## 2nd Lieutenants—contd.

1 Duncan, W. 26 Nov. 14  
1 Cowden, R. E. 28 Nov. 14  
1 Gordon, E. H. 1 Dec. 14  
1 Sharpe, J. S. 1 Dec. 14  
1 Goodwin, S. E. (\*Lt.  
15 Dec 14) 10 Dec 14  
1 Woods, F. P. 10 Dec 14  
1 Linnick, P. O. 10 Dec 14  
2 Pritchard, L. A. G.  
10 Dec 14  
3 Bryan, J. N. L. 10 Dec 14  
2 Hare, A. C. 10 Dec 14  
2 Jones, W. M. 10 Dec 14  
2 Barrell, F. O. 10 Dec 14  
2 Lamb, R. N. 14 Dec 14  
10 Riordan, D. S. C.  
G. E. O. C. 21 Dec 14  
2 Conlath, J. 19 Jan. 15  
1 Ward, F. S. (\*Lt.  
20 June 15) 18 Feb. 15  
3 Wilson, H. B. 24 Feb. 15  
1 Mountfield, E. N.  
24 Feb. 15  
1 Fisher, G. L. H. 3 Mar. 15  
1 Hill, T. H. 20 Mar. 15  
1 Neely, H. J. 2 Apr. 15  
2 Roberts, B. 18 Apr. 15  
2 Orchard, E. F. S.  
13 Apr. 15  
1 Tunbridge, A. R. T.  
12 Apr. 15  
2 Waddington, J. 12 Apr. 15  
1 Toms, C. W. 17 Apr. 15  
1 Sedg, W. J. A. 18 Apr. 15  
1 Dennis, L. J. 18 Apr. 15  
2 Prescott, A. 18 Apr. 15  
1 Armstrong, T. H.  
(\*Lt. 10 June 15) 18 Apr. 15  
2 Forshaw, J. 19 Apr. 15  
2 Burbridge, H. C. 1 June 15  
1 Castle, J. P. 22 July 15  
1 North, G. W. 7 Aug. 15  
1 Coaker, Q. R. 7 Aug. 15

## Adjutants.

2 Smitham, J. M., Lt.  
(\*Capt.) 23 Nov. 14  
1 Brighton, J. S.,  
2nd Lt. (\*Lt.) 1 Mar. 15  
1 Duder, H. S., 2nd  
Lt. (\*Capt.) 17 June 15

## Quarter-Masters.

1 Clarke, H. G.,  
hon. lt. 50 Oct. 13  
2 Taylor, J. E., hon. lt.  
20 Nov. 14

## Medical Officer.

Chaplain.  
X Brindle, Lt. Gen.  
R., Bishop, D. S. O.,  
Chap. 1st Class  
ret. pay, Hon.  
Chap. (T. F.)  
(att. N.B.) [E. C.]  
6 Mar. 10  
X Dawes, Rev. W. S.  
(R. C.) Chpl. 4th  
Class (T. F.) att.  
15 July 14

## Attached.

2 Hansford, 2nd Lt.  
J. S., T. F. Res.  
[U. storm—Green.  
Facing—Black.]

9th Battalion.  
(Territorial.)

"South Africa, 1900-01,"  
57, 58 and 61, Everton Road,  
Liverpool.

## Hon. Colonel.

Walker, W. H. 17 Mar. 97  
Lt.-Colonel.  
2p. Watts, L., vd. 4 Feb. 11  
X Eccles, R., Bt. Col.  
ret. pay \*18 June 15

## Majors.

3p. Lloyd, J. E., vd (H)  
(\*Lt.-Col. 22 Dec 14) 6 Nov. 00  
3 Clarke, R. J., 2d 4 Feb. 11

## Captains.

2p. Wards, A. 17 Aug. 01  
1p. Fint, E. G. (q) 16 July 04  
2p. A. Wells, F. 22 Apr. 05  
X McLoughlin, G. M.  
(H) Adj. (Maj.)  
16 Sept. 14) 6 Nov. 03  
2 Park, J. G. (H) 4 Feb. 11  
2p. McMillan, W. J. 6 Apr. 11  
1p. Owens, F. G. 5 Sept. 14  
1 Watta, N. L. 16 Sept. 14  
2 Van Gruijsen, N. A. R.  
16 Sept. 14

## Lieutenants.

1 Evans, F. S. (\*Maj.  
1 July 15) 21 May 11  
1 Buckley, F. (\*Capt.  
16 Sept 14) 27 July 12  
1 Mostyn, W. J. (\*Capt.  
16 Sept 14) \*Feb. 15  
1p. Stewart, C. H. (\*Capt.  
7 Mar. 15) \*22 Aug. 14  
2 Pilkington, C. G.  
(\*Capt. 15 May 15) 16 Sept. 14  
1 Hunt, J. W. B. (\*Maj.  
12 May 15) 16 Sept. 14  
1 Fulton, A. W., Adj.  
(\*Capt. 12 May 15) 16 Sept. 14  
1 Lederer, P. G. A.  
(\*Capt. 12 May 15) 16 Sept. 14

## 2nd Lieutenants.

2 Orford, T. (\*Capt.  
15 May 15) 16 June 11  
1 Narm, G. A. B. (\*Capt.  
4 June 15) 1 June 12  
2 Hill, C. G. R. 7 Aug. 12  
1 McCann, A. C. (\*Capt.  
16 June 15) 26 Apr. 14  
2 Fawcett, A. H. (\*Capt.  
15 June 15) 2 Apr. 14  
1 Ellis, C. S. (\*Capt.  
7 Mar. 15) 15 Aug. 14  
1 Perry, S. T. J. (\*Lt.  
11 Jan. 15) 16 Aug. 14  
1 Perry, W. R. (\*Lt.  
7 Mar. 15) 22 Aug. 14

## 2nd Lieutenants—contd.

1 Eli, N. L. S. G. C. (\*Lt.  
7 Mar. 15) 22 Aug. 14  
1 Milner, L. F. (\*Lt.  
7 Mar. 15) 22 Aug. 14  
1 Daniel, H. O. (\*Lt.  
7 Mar. 15) 18 Sept. 14  
2 Fausett, S. S. (\*Lt.  
15 May 15) 30 Sept. 14  
2 Lee-Jones, J. L. (\*Lt.  
15 May 15) 20 Oct. 14  
1 Newton, H. W. (\*Lt.  
12 Mar. 15) 20 Oct. 14  
1 McMillin, H. S. (\*Lt.  
4 June 15) 11 Nov. 14  
1 Howroyd, B. W. (\*Lt.  
12 Mar. 15) 11 Nov. 14  
2 Roberts, E. H. G.  
11 Nov. 14  
2 Digory, P. 11 Nov. 14  
1 Watta, T. W. 11 Nov. 14  
2 Kovach, F. A. 1 Dec. 14  
1 Wilkinson, H. H.  
(\*Lt. 15 May 15) 16 Dec. 14  
2 Williams, W. A. (\*Lt.  
15 May 15) 16 Dec. 14  
2 Povey, T. G. 16 Dec. 14  
2 Parker, F. H. (\*Lt.  
15 May 15) 16 Dec. 14  
2 Parker, T. W. L. 16 Dec. 14  
2 Williams, E. M. 16 Dec. 14  
2 Payne, E. 16 Dec. 14  
2 Wards, A. G. 16 Dec. 14  
2 Hansen, C. F. V. 26 Feb. 15  
2 Hellett, H. J. 7 Mar. 15  
2 Gardiner, R. 18 Apr. 15  
1 Nott, C. (\*Lt.  
16 June 15) 18 Apr. 15  
1 Coote, P. R. H. C. 18 Apr. 15  
1 Russell, J. A. 18 Apr. 15  
2 Morton, G. H. 23 Apr. 15  
2 Cokram, L. H. 23 Apr. 15  
2 Vicars, T. 23 Apr. 15  
2 Buckle, G. F. 5 May 15  
2 Challiner, W. H. 5 May 15  
1 Denton, R. 19 May 15  
1 Hunt, A. E. 4 Aug. 15  
1 Berry, A. 23 Aug. 15  
1 Potter, A. G. 23 Aug. 15

## Adjutants.

1 Fulton, A. W., Lt.  
(\*Capt.) 31 Oct. 14  
2 McLoughlin, G. M.,  
Capt. (Maj.) 19 Mar. 15

## Quarter-Masters.

1 X Burnett, R., hon. lt.  
30 June 10  
2 Crobie, G. W.  
hon. lt. 3 Mar. 15  
1 Burnett, R. E., hon. lt.  
22 Apr. 15  
1 Jones, J. O.,  
hon. lt. 12 Aug. 15



980b	981	981a	981b
------	-----	------	------

THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL REGIMENT)—(Regt. Dist. No. 8)—*contd.*

9th Bn.—*contd.*

**Medical Officer.**  
 1p. **McMahon, Maj.**  
 M. J., M.D.  
 R.A.M.C. (T.F.)  
 (attd.) (Hon.  
 Lt. in Army 18  
 June 01) (E) 6Feb.15  
 17May04

**Chaplain.**  
 Jones, Rev. W. S.,  
 Chapl. 4th Class  
 (T.F.) (attd.) 2July05

**Attached.**  
 20Candler, 2nd Lt.  
 A. P., T.F. Res.  
 2Voysey, 2nd Lt.  
 F. W., T.F. Res.  
 2Boak, 2nd Lt. C. B.,  
 T.F. Res.  
 2Udall, 2nd Lt. C. H.,  
 T.F. Res.  
 2Abbott, 2nd Lt. W.,  
 T.F. Res.  
 2Wigzell, 2nd Lt.  
 H. E., T.F. Res.  
 [Uniform—Scarlet,  
 Footings—Blue.]

**10th (Scottish)  
 Battalion.  
 (Territorial.)**

"South Africa, 1902."  
 Fraser Street, Liverpool.

**Hon. Colonel.**  
 2Tulbirtine, J. G.,  
 Marq. of M.V.O.,  
 D.S.O., Bk. Maj.,  
 h.p. 2  
 18June14  
 Lt.-Colonel.

sp. Nicholl, W. (Q) 20Oct.11

**Majors.**  
 1xDavidson, J. E.,  
 C.M.G. (f) (\*Lt.-  
 Col. 26 Nov. 14)

2Fairrie, A. (\*Lt.-Col.  
 28 Aug. 15) 12Oct.14

**Captains.**  
 2Marshall, W. H.,  
 (\*Maj. 3 Dec. 14)

1Thin, E. G. (\*Lt.-Col.  
 9 May 15) 21Dec.10

1xAnderson, A. S.,  
 (\*Maj. 5 Jan. 15) 17Sept.12

sp. A. Lockhart, R.M.D.

1xDickinson, R. F. S.,  
 18Sept.12

1p. Harrison, F. 23Aug.17

2Campbell, D. A.,  
 (H) 2 26Sept.14

2Dun, F., 29Nov.12

2Rager, A. N. R., 2  
 (\*Capt. 2 Dec. 14) 23Aug.14  
 1July12

**Lieutenants.**

p. A. Mitchell, R. H. 21June11

2Maddox, D. (\*Capt.  
 26 Sept. 14) 2Aug.12

2Jesse, G. F. (\*Capt. 18 Apr.  
 15) 17Sept.12

1Ree, G. B. L. (\*Capt.  
 12 Oct. 14) 17Sept.12

1Gateshead, L. R. A., 2  
 18Sept.12

1Remson, W. J. H.,  
 (\*Capt. 5 Jan. 15) 8Feb.13

2Bingham, D. A.,  
 (\*Capt. 15 Jan. 15) 18Sept.14

1Cunningham, R. D.,  
 (\*Capt. 12 Apr. 15) 26Sept.14

2Watson, J. (\*Capt.  
 24 Mar. 15) 29Nov.14

1Whitehead, N. T. 24Mar.15

1Gammell, K. A. 24Mar.15

2Cookson, A. 24Mar.15

1McGillchrist, A. M.,  
 24Mar.15

**2nd Lieutenants.**  
 1xGraham, J. (\*Capt.  
 13 Apr. 15) 22Aug.14

2Doughty, A. MacD.,  
 (\*Lt. 13 May 15) 26Sept.14

1Holland, F. 26Sept.14

1Wall, L. G. (\*Lt.  
 13 Apr. 15) 17Nov.14

2Brown, D. (\*Lt.  
 12 May 15) 17Nov.14

2Dickinson, A. P. (\*Capt.  
 13 May 15) 17Nov.14

2Cowan, G. K. (\*Lt.  
 4 Dec. 14) 17Nov.14

1Houghton, A. E. J.,  
 17Nov.14

2Moffat, T. A. (\*Lt.  
 4 Dec. 14) 17Nov.14

1Lloyd, W. R. 17Nov.14

1Lloyd, E. A. (\*Lt.  
 4 Dec. 14) 17Nov.14

2Glynn, C. B., Adjt.  
 (\*Capt. 12 May 15) 17Nov.14

2Morris, K. D. R.,  
 (\*Capt. 12 May 15) 17Nov.14

2Wilson, K. F. (\*Capt.  
 24 Mar. 15) 17Nov.14

1Duckworth, G. S.,  
 (Lt. 4 Dec. 14) 17Nov.14

2Salvidge, A. T. 17Nov.14

2Steele, M. 26Nov.14

2Davidson, W. A. (\*Lt.  
 24 Mar. 15) 26Nov.14

1Philpotts, W. R. 26Dec.14

2Noble, A. H. 2Jan.15

2Duckworth, E. H. S.,  
 1Jan.15

1Bullen, W. F. 16Jan.15

2Dun, L. F. 12Mar.15

2Allen, H. S. 12Mar.15

2Cunningham, T. E.,  
 12Mar.15

2Cockburn, W. B.,  
 12Mar.15

2White, J. F. 15Mar.15

2McConnell, G. 20Mar.15

**2nd Lieutenants—contd.**

1Lindsay, R. C. 18Mar.15

1Nisbet, J. C. T. 12Mar.15

1Roddick, T. G. 18Mar.15

1Widdison, A. G. 18Mar.15

1Montgomery, H. B.,  
 18Apr.15

1Guthrie, R. F. 18Apr.15

1Arlie, B. 18Apr.15

2Graham, A. J. 29Apr.15

2Cowan, A. A. 29Apr.15

2Ainsworth, R. T. 2May.15

1Williams, J. B. 18May.15

1Stubbs, R. W. 18May.15

1Davey, G. B. 18May.15

2McKinnell, R. J.,  
 20June15

2Mill, L. B. 20June15

2Glasbrook, E. K.,  
 20June15

1Ingerthorpe, N. L.,  
 2July15

1Menkhous, E. B.,  
 2July15

1Furton, G. L. 2July15

1Morton, G. D. 2July15

1Bird, R. W. 2July15

1Howden, J. B. 2July15

1Hollins, R. H. 2July15

1Taylor, C. E. 18Aug.15

**Adjutants.**  
 1James, C. P. Capt.  
 Arg. & South  
 Highrs. 20Oct.13

1Glynn, C. B., 2nd Lt.  
 (\*Lt.) 17June15

**Quarter-Masters.**  
 1xJack, A. C., Hon. S.,  
 16Oct.14

1xW. Farmer, D. D.,  
 Hon. S., 20June15

1Thacker, A., Hon. S.,  
 2July15

**Medical Officers**  
 2Kidston, Capt. M. W.,  
 M.B., R.A.M.C.  
 (T.F.) (attd.) 1Nov.13

10Charvase, Lt. N. G.,  
 M.B., R.A.M.C.  
 (T.F.) (attd.) 2June15

**Chaplain.**  
 Connell, Rev. A.,  
 R.A., B.D. (R.F.),  
 Chapl. 4th Class  
 (T.F.) (attd.) 1Apr.08

1Hamilton, Rev. J.,  
 M.A. (C.S.) Chapl.  
 4th Class (T.F.)  
 (attd.) 2Jan.15

[Uniform—Drab,  
 Footings—Scarlet.]

**7th (Isle of Man)  
 Volunteer  
 Battalion.**

(Isle of Man.)

**Deputy.**  
 Mackenzie, T. V.D.  
 (\*Maj. 11 Feb. 15)

**Captains.**  
 2Owrie, J. H. 22Oct.14

1Mythreus, J. S. 22Apr.15

**Lieutenant.**  
 2nd Lieutenants.  
 2Ryan, R. J. (\*Lt.  
 2 Apr. 15) 16Dec.14

1Kerruish, H. C. 2Apr.15

1Shimmin, W. E. 2Apr.15

1Beauregard, R. C. 2Apr.15

1Mellor, F. H. 2Apr.15

**Medical Officer.**  
 2Richardson, W., M.D.,  
 Surg.-Maj. 12Feb.08

**Acting Chaplain.**  
 2Jolly, Rev. R. B.,  
 M.A. 2July14

[Uniform—Scarlet,  
 Footings—Blue.]

**11th (Service)  
 Battalion  
 (Pioneers).**

**In Command.**  
 2Bailey, Maj. (temp.  
 Lt.-Col.) V. T.,  
 18Aug.14

17Feb.13

**Majors.**  
 (2nd in Command.)  
 2Watson, Maj. S. H.,  
 26 Pioneers 22Jan.15

2Ogle, B. C. (temp.)  
 (\*Capt. W.I.R.) 1Jan.15

**Captains.**  
 1Langmore, Capt. L. G.,  
 Res. of Off. 27Sept.14

1Gray, Capt. G., 28 Bn.  
 18Aug.14

1Bingham, B.,  
 28 Bn. 26Sept.14

1Mitchell, Capt. G. E.,  
 18 Bn. 17Oct.14

1Johnson, H.,  
 (temp.) 1Jan.15

1Brown, G. E. A. 1Jan.15

1Trotter, A. F. (temp.)  
 20Feb.15

982	982a	982b	982c
-----	------	------	------

THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL REGIMENT)—(Regtl. Dist. No. 8)—*contd.*

11th Bn.—*contd.*

*Lieutenants.*

Denny, M. C. M. 20Oct.14  
(temp.)  
Paget, H. 1Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Chavasse, A. 1Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Long, F. R. 1Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Bennett, H. R. 1Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Smith, G. R. 1Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Goodacre, J. S. 1Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Faton, R. K. 1Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Stanton, D. 1Feb.15  
(temp.)

*2nd Lieutenants.*

Wareing, W. R. 28Aug.14  
(temp.)  
Atkinson, L. O. 1Sept.14  
(temp.)  
Galt, R. B. 2Sept.14  
(temp.)  
Grundwell, A. 2Sept.14  
(temp.)  
Brereton, E. 17Oct.14  
(temp.)  
Hopkins, G. H. 7Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Mulroy, T. B. 14Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Williams, L. R. 14Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Gray, A. L. B. 1Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Fox, H. A. 1Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Fye-Smith, P. H. G. 22Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Clayton, R. W. 26Jan.15  
(temp.)

*Adjutant.*

*Quarter-Master.*

Callaghan, H., *hon. M.*  
28Aug.14

12th (Service)  
Battalion.

*In Command.*

McNicholson, Lt.-Col.  
Lt. St. C., *Res. of*  
OZ. 6Sept.14

*Major.*

*2nd in Command.*

McVine, A. N. (temp.)  
*late Capt.* 5 Bn.  
R. Mun. Fus. 6May15  
7Dec.14

*Majors.*

Nutter, H. F. (temp.)  
(Capt. *Malay States*  
*Vol. For.*) 28Apr.15  
11July15

*Captains.*

Williams, Capt. T.  
W., *ret. pay* 16Sept.14  
Pearson, E. H.  
(temp.), *Adj't.* 20Oct.14  
Sorr, L. P. (temp.)  
(*Hon. Lt. in Army*  
12Sept.02) 20Oct.14  
Charley, Capt.  
R. B., *L'pool E.*  
15Nov.14  
Howard, Capt. W. J. H.  
*L'pool E.* 20Nov.14  
11Mar.15  
McClemenson, C. R. D.  
(temp.) (*Lt. Res. of*  
*Off.*) 20Nov.14  
Mears, W. H.  
(temp.) 20Dec.14  
Hunt, A. F.  
(temp.) 26Mar.15

*Lieutenants.*

Jacob, C. W. 20Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Hogarth, A. R. 20Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Edwards, A. S.  
(temp.) 20Dec.14  
Campbell, I. V. H.  
(temp.) 20Dec.14  
Brassey, H. R. 20Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Porter, R. S. 2Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Ballantine, H. 2Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Wolley Dod, D. E.  
(temp.) 2Feb.15  
Talbot, C. F. C.  
(temp.) 12Apr.15

*2nd Lieutenants.*

Ainslie, M. F. 4Sept.14  
(temp.)  
Sturt, C. G. (temp.) 4Sept.14  
Horstall, R. E. 6Sept.14  
(temp.)  
Percy, R. 17Oct.14  
(temp.)  
Ford, A. L. 2Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Burt, F. S. 4Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Swallow, J. R. 4Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Heasley, L. 12Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Millican, N. S. 12Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Skilken, F. R. 12Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Shearman, T. E. C. 27Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Davison, R. 27Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Wilkinson, D. F. 28Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Dixon, A. P. 2Dec.14  
(temp.)

*2nd Lieutenants—contd.*

Follows, O. G. B. 12Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Plummer, J. R. B.  
(temp.) 15July15  
*Adjutant.*  
Pearson, Capt. (temp.)  
R. H. 11Nov.14  
*Quarter-Master.*  
Britton, H., *hon. Lt.*  
(temp.) 2June15

13th (Service)  
Battalion.

*In Command.*

McGibbons, Lt.-Col.  
(temp.) A. St. H.  
(*Hon. Lt.-Col. ret.*  
*Spec. Res.*) (*Hon.*  
*Capt in Army*) 23July15

*Major.*

(*2nd in Command.*)  
Ommanney, F. O.  
(temp.) (*Capt.*  
*Res. of Off.*) 2Nov.14

*Majors.*

Whalley, F. J. 2Nov.14  
(temp.)  
*Captains.*  
Cochrane, R. 19Oct.14  
(temp.)  
Gaps, W. N. W. 2Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Hodgson, A. J. 2Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Simkin, H. J. 26Jan.15  
(temp.)

*Lieutenants.*

Goulden, W. 2Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Kinns, P. O. 2Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Burrough, W. E. 2Dec.14  
(temp.) *Adj't.*  
Nixon, K. B. 2Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Pollard, G. R. 26Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Tiddoll, C. B. 26Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Molony, C. A. 26Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Sellers, F. A. 26Jan.15  
(temp.)

*2nd Lieutenants.*

Carter, W. H. S. 22Sept.14  
(temp.)  
Nixon, R. G. B. 22Sept.14  
(temp.)  
Phillips, J. A. (temp.) 4Nov.14  
(temp.)  
McVicker, J. W. 14Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Gilbert, J. B. 24Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Todd, H. G. (temp.) 26Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Hick, G. T. (temp.) 20Nov.14

*2nd Lieutenants—contd.*

Briscoe, H. V. 10Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Fawcner, H. S. 12Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Simkin, F. 12Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Blackledge, L. H. 22Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Redmond, A. de R. S. 2Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Leiville, H. J. 7Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Graham, J. (temp.) 2Jan.15  
Harris, P. G. 2Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Clegg, J. (temp.) 2Jan.15  
King, F. R. (temp.) 2Feb.15  
Fisher, J. A. (temp.) 10Feb.15  
Atkinson, J. D. 24Feb.15  
Halsall, R. 24Mar.15  
(temp.)

*Adjutant.*

Burrough, Lt.  
(temp.) W. R. 12Mar.15  
*Quarter-Master.*  
Hollins, J. P., *hon.*  
Lt. (temp.) 26Oct.14

14th (Service)  
Battalion.

*In Command.*

McWilson, Lt.-Col.  
A. W. M., *Res.*  
of OZ. 21Sept.14

*Major.*

(*2nd in Command.*)  
McSinclair, Str. J. R. G.  
Lt. Col. *ret.* (temp.)  
(*Hon. Capt. in Army*  
2 Sept. 01) 2Jan.15  
9Oct.14

*Majors.*

Moffat, R. J. G. 2Jan.15  
(temp.)

*Captains.*

McLardner, Capt.  
E. G. D., *Res. of*  
*Off., Adj't.* 16Sept.14  
2Aug.14  
Smith, C. H. (temp.)  
*aid. 5 Bn. L'pool*  
28Sept.14  
Lean, J. W. (temp.)  
*Capt. ret. T.F.* 29Oct.14  
Tatlow, F. T. (temp.)  
*Lt. Res. of Off.* 29Nov.14  
Dempster, C. 29Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Anderson, M. E. A. 2Dec.14  
Smellie, A. J. D. 2Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Sykes, A. R. 24Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Hall, K. 1Apr.15  
(temp.)

982d	982e	983	983a
------	------	-----	------

THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL REGIMENT)—(Regtl. Dist. No. 8).—contd.

14th Bn.—contd.

*Lieutenants.*

Knight, A. R. 3Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Smith, E. T. 3Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Mallory, L. S. 27Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Hilditch, R. 27Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Knott, P. G. (temp.) 27Jan.15  
Cross, F. N. 24Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Beavan, J. 30Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Carrothers, E. 1Apr.15  
(temp.)

*2nd Lieutenants.*

Jennison, S. A. 22Sept.14  
(temp.)  
Callaghan, A. N. 4Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Hillman, E. C. 14Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Eddison, T. D. 14Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Hurst, C. J. (temp.) 28Nov.14  
Jones, R. H. 2Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Gray, D. H. 3Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Nelson, H. C. 15Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Day, N. L. (temp.) 15Dec.14  
McCorkindale, I. 5Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Bryson, C. P. 6Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Allen, J. G. (temp.) 7Jan.15  
Sterling, W. 15Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Bloore, R. H. 16Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Rutherford, J. H. 22Jan.15  
(temp.)  
McNee, G. A. 15Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Bellamy, D. W. 26Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Fox, E. (temp.) 27Mar.15  
Wright, P. L. 27Mar.15  
(temp.)

*Adjutant.*

McLardner, Capt.  
E. G. D., Res.  
of Off. 1Oct.14

*Quarter-Master.*

Hopps, H., hon. lt.  
(temp.) 22Oct.14

15th (Reserve)  
Battalion.

*In Command.*

Mellor, Col. L. S.,  
ret. pay 23Nov.14

*Major.*

(2nd in Command.)  
Hastings, B. St.  
J. W. (temp.)  
(Capt. ret. pay) 20Feb.15

*Majors.*

Fisher, J. W.  
(temp.) 20Feb.15

*Captains.*

Grierson, H. G.  
(temp.) 3Nov.14  
Wynn, M. C. J. 10July15  
(temp.) 9Dec.14  
Corson, C. A. 14Dec.14  
Lrysdale, J. R. 14Dec.14  
Servaes, A. J. 6Jan.15  
Harrison, H. (temp.) 7Jan.15  
Davies, R. G. (temp.) 15Jan.15  
Chesters, W. (temp.) 8Feb.15  
Adjt. Tice, C. H. (temp.) 20Feb.15

*Lieutenants.*

Wilson, R. 10Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Weston, W. J. 19Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Parkinson, Lt. G. M.,  
North'd Fus. 16Jan.15  
12Mar.15  
Hill, F. A. 27Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Weston, R. H. 1Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Calderwood, J. L. 1Feb.15  
French, B. St. G. 1Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Blake, F. S. 15Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Barker, F. S. 1Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Hardy, V. G. 1Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Hinchcliffe, F. 12Apr.15  
Farran, G. P. 13Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Willmott, H. J. C. 24May15  
(temp.) 6Oct.14

*2nd Lieutenants.*

Hedges, C. J. G. De F  
(temp.) 22Sept.14  
Jameson, J. B. 22Sept.14  
(temp.)  
Anderson, H. F. 22Oct.14  
(temp.)  
Parkinson, R. W. 22Oct.14  
(temp.)

2nd Lieutenants.—contd.

Morrison, L. 23Oct.14  
(temp.)  
Greenhalgh, M. 23Oct.14  
(temp.)  
L. (temp.)  
Bayley, V. 27Oct.14  
(temp.)  
Bremner, S. (temp.) 9Nov.14  
Fremner, T. P. 9Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Christie, C. P. 13Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Gulsani, St. J. J. V. A. 13Nov.14  
(temp.)  
Humphrey, I. B. 1Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Austin, E. L. 2Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Jenkins, L. 2Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Monro, A. H. 9Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Carson, G. W. 10Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Coates, H. E. 18Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Hewitt, R. M. 18Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Gollin, E. B. 22Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Sloot, F. A. L. 23Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Horser, S. C. S. 23Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Counsell, J. A. 29Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Cooper, C. H. B. 30Dec.14  
(temp.)  
Craig, H. (temp.) 8Jan.15  
Davis, A. 9Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Herdman, G. A. 11Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Clifton, F. J. 15Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Hoey, W. (temp.) 15Jan.15  
Lunt, W. F. (temp.) 15Jan.15  
Wallace, E. L. 16Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Higgins, F. W. 21Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Byng, G. W. (temp.) 25Jan.15  
Webster, W. E. 22Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Boundy, F. E. 26Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Macdonald, R. 26Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Browne, W. J. 29Jan.15  
(temp.)  
Atkinson, F. 1Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Ashoon, E. 6Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Peers, R. (temp.) 8Feb.15  
Parry, J. S. 8Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Smvth, S. S. 15Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Davies, E. 16Feb.15  
(temp.)

2nd Lieutenants.—contd.

Lawrence, H. R. 23Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Mansergh, H. R. 23Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Lebell, F. B. 25Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Adamson, J. H. 25Feb.15  
(temp.)  
Gregson, F. 3Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Heywood, R. 6Mar.15  
(temp.)  
(1) Ballion, G. W. 10Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Pilkington, J. O. 15Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Macartney, H. J. 17Mar.15  
Macdonald, A. 17Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Chilcott, A. E. 19Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Davies, L. R. 20Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Dimond, F. E. 23Mar.15  
Morrison, N. 26Mar.15  
(temp.)  
Johnston, W. H. (temp.) 27Mar.15  
Collin, K. G. 2Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Joseph, L. M. 2Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Thompson, A. H. 1Jul.15  
Bowman, C. B. 3Ag. r.15  
(temp.)  
Ross, W. (temp.) 3Ag. r.15  
Chadwick, R. G. 5Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Mahony, T. G. 5Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Ince, S. R. 6Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Arundel-Smith, H. E. (temp.) 7Apr.15  
Rowechapple, W. C. 7Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Elkan, A. C. J. 7Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Newton, H. S. 7Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Longdin, H. W. 10Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Lindsay, W. 10Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Webster, C. P. 10Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Leonard, D. G. 14Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Blisland, J. 22Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Groom, A. C. H. 22Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Nelson, R. C. 28Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Johnson, J. F. 29Apr.15  
(temp.)  
James, C. 29Apr.15  
(temp.)  
Spence, L. R. B. 5May15  
(temp.)

1922b	1922c	1922d	1922e
THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL REGIMENT)—(Regtl. Dist. No. 2)— <i>contd.</i>			
16th Bn.— <i>contd.</i>			
<i>2nd Lieutenant</i> — <i>contd.</i>			
Black, E. (temp.)	6 May 15		
Addy, J. V. (temp.)	7 May 15		
Rushworth, J. A. (temp.)	7 May 15		
Grossart, R. D. (temp.)	8 May 15		
Lancaster, T. W. (temp.)	12 May 15		
Howard, D. (temp.)	13 May 15		
Williams, F. J. (temp.)	13 May 15		
Berwick, C. (temp.)	13 May 15		
Bane, L. A. (temp.)	13 May 15		
Halfpenny, W. H. (temp.)	13 May 15		
Pagan, M. (temp.)	13 May 15		
Taggart, W. Q. (temp.)	20 May 15		
Stevenson, L. (temp.)	20 May 15		
Barnett, J. H. N. (temp.)	27 May 15		
Johnstone, N. W. W. (temp.)	20 May 15		
Clark, S. L. (temp.)	21 May 15		
Hart, H. V. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Jackson, T. J. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Johnson, S. H. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Jude, G. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Legge, G. E. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Maddrell, J. K. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Middleton, J. S. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Nash, W. E. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Fisher, L. P. K. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Atkins, O. L. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Boechman, F. J. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Brown, W. W. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Calcott, O. D. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Cardell, F. L. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Ellis, J. A. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Parker, F. R. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Shepherd, J. M. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Bond-Andrews, E. S. J. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Bullen, W. E. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Burtemer, C. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Freedman, B. (temp.)	21 June 15		
<i>2nd Lieutenant</i> — <i>contd.</i>			
Maxwell, A. R. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Nelson, J. C. O. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Nettleton, T. A. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Ogle, R. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Tomlinson, R. H. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Brown, R. W. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Cockey, J. E. P. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Lyon, N. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Clayton, C. V. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Corrall, T. P. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Vaughan, J. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Fairhurst, H. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Wakely, W. N. (temp.)	21 June 15		
Snowden, C. C. (temp.)	21 June 15		
<i>Adjutant.</i>			
Chesters, Capt. (temp.)	1 Apr 15		
<i>Quarter-Master.</i>			
Williams, B. R., hon. lt. (temp.)	12 Sept 14		
<i>Attached.</i>			
Whittaker, Lt. (temp.)	1 May 15		
16th (Reserve) Battalion.			
<i>In Command.</i>			
Schleuter, Bt. Col. P., C.B. ret. pay (lt.)	2 Dec 14		
<i>Major.</i>			
Lumb, Maj. A., ret. pay	6 Jan 15		
<i>Majors.</i>			
Parker, Maj. R. G., D.S.O., R. Lanc. R. —	26 June 10		
Connell, T. O. (temp.)	9 Dec 14		
<i>Captains.</i>			
Mitchell, C. A. (temp.)	1 Oct 14		
Daniels, F. P. J. (temp.)	2 Oct 14		
Shepherd, Capt. W. M., 8 Bn. L'pool	24 Aug 14		
Twibell, R. (temp.)	2 Dec 14		
Smith, R. W. (temp.)	4 Dec 14		
Harston, T. B. (temp.)	7 Dec 14		
de Wolf, H. F. (temp.)	24 Dec 14		
Wheeler, R. A. (temp.)	1 Jan 15		
Stevens, J. (temp.)	1 Jan 15		
Roberts, C. G. D. (temp.)	10 Jan 15		
<i>Lieutenants.</i>			
Gately, A. J. (temp.)	2 Dec 14		
Woodward, R. S. (temp.)	14 Dec 14		
Brown, G. H. W. L. (temp.)	14 Dec 14		
Doeharty, W. Mc K. (temp.)	1 Jan 15		
Robinson, E. S. (temp.)	1 Jan 15		
England, W. E. (temp.)	1 Jan 15		
Sidney, R. J. H. (temp.)	1 Feb 15		
Dunn, H. H. (temp.)	15 Feb 15		
Tew, C. N. A. (temp.)	15 Feb 15		
Williams, S. A. (temp.)	22 Feb 15		
Covell, H. H. (temp.)	3 Mar 15		
Switt, F. C. (temp.)	6 May 15		
Burke, R. (temp.)	7 May 15		
<i>2nd Lieutenant.</i>			
Thompson, R. M. (temp.)	2 Dec 14		
Ormesher, W. (temp.)	4 Dec 14		
Quinnell, A. V. (temp.)	4 Dec 14		
Wilkinson, G. E. (temp.)	4 Dec 14		
Faton, F. A. E. (temp.)	7 Dec 14		
Keegan, C. F. (temp.)	7 Dec 14		
Riddell, D. M. (temp.)	7 Dec 14		
Bustard, C. E. D. (temp.)	18 Dec 14		
Friestman, H. E. (temp.)	18 Dec 14		
Baker, J. N. L. (temp.)	22 Dec 14		
Noble, H. E. (temp.)	22 Dec 14		
Hankinson, W. C. (temp.)	14 Jan 15		
Angelbeck, A. (temp.)	14 Jan 15		
Reld, A. McK. (temp.)	14 Jan 15		
Morgan, V. H. (temp.)	21 Jan 15		
Pearsall, R. M. S. (temp.)	27 Jan 15		
Thomson, G. F. M. (temp.)	28 Jan 15		
Small, H. A. (temp.)	28 Jan 15		
Jagoe, J. F. (temp.)	28 Jan 15		
Morris, W. O. E. (temp.)	9 Feb 15		
Sexton, M. C. (temp.)	9 Feb 15		
Cook, A. C. (temp.)	10 Feb 15		
<i>2nd Lieutenant</i> — <i>contd.</i>			
Walker, W. M. (temp.)	12 Feb 15		
Conry, J. H. (temp.)	12 Feb 15		
Warburton, T. M. (temp.)	1 Mar 15		
Marah, N. C. (temp.)	6 Mar 15		
Grundy, F. W. (temp.)	6 Mar 15		
Gell, P. (temp.)	9 Mar 15		
Handley, T. S. (temp.)	9 Mar 15		
Kissack, F. D. (temp.)	9 Mar 15		
Leae, A. C. (temp.)	9 Mar 15		
Quine, S. L. (temp.)	9 Mar 15		
Rutherford, G. E. (temp.)	10 Mar 15		
Thomas, H. J. (temp.)	10 Mar 15		
Gee, E. T. (temp.)	12 Mar 15		
Routledge, F. J. (temp.)	22 Mar 15		
Whitley, W. G. (temp.)	22 Mar 15		
Kinsman, C. H. (temp.)	27 Mar 15		
Ashton, A. L. (temp.)	27 Mar 15		
Morland, E. (temp.)	2 Apr 15		
Mac Maie, J. E. J. (temp.)	2 Apr 15		
Huntrey, B. (temp.)	7 Apr 15		
Yates, J. (temp.)	7 Apr 15		
Furlong, P. J. (temp.)	10 Apr 15		
Laughlin, J. O. (temp.)	10 Apr 15		
Provosch, D. (temp.)	1 May 15		
Aslachsen, H. S. (temp.)	5 May 15		
Tilby, F. W. (temp.)	5 May 15		
Fuge, R. K. P. (temp.)	6 May 15		
Cooper, F. L. (temp.)	6 May 15		
Barby, F. T. (temp.)	6 May 15		
Young, B. J. (temp.)	10 May 15		
Stott, W. O. (temp.)	12 May 15		
Birrell, C. C. (temp.)	12 May 15		
Fearn, N. B. (temp.)	12 May 15		
Hanaghan, P. (temp.)	12 May 15		
England, C. A. (temp.)	12 May 15		
Barton, W. A. (temp.)	12 May 15		
Varndell, L. J. (temp.)	12 May 15		
Walker, C. (temp.)	12 May 15		
Browne, H. N. (temp.)	12 May 15		
Harris, H. (temp.)	12 May 15		

1933f	1933g	1934	1934a
<b>THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL) REGIMENT—(Regt. Dist. No. 8)—contd.</b>			
<b>16th Bn.—contd.</b>	<b>17th (Service) Battalion.</b>	<b>2nd Lieutenant.</b>	<b>18th (Service) Battalion.</b>
<b>2nd Lieutenants—contd.</b>	<b>(1st City.)</b>		<b>(2nd City.)</b>
Heathcock, R. E. (temp.) 22May15	In Command.	Heap, A. G. (temp.) 18Sept.14	In Command.
Snell, W. M. (temp.) 22May15	2nd Lt. Col.	Rodney, Hon. C. C. S. (temp.) 18Sept.14	Trotter, Maj. (temp.) Lt. Col. E. H. D.S.O., G. Gds. 18Sept.14
Thompson, F. R. (temp.) 21May15	R.O. Res. of Off. 1Feb.15	Porritt, E. R. (temp.) 18Sept.14	Majors.
O'Byrne, A. J. (temp.) 21June15	Major.	Sproat, J. McC. (temp.) 18Sept.14	(2nd in Command.)
Price, J. D. (temp.) 21June15	2nd in Command.	Griffin, D. M. (temp.) 2Nov.14	Majors.
Reeves, A. J. (temp.) 21June15		Robinson, A. (temp.) 1Dec.14	Cornish-Bowden, R. K. (temp.) 22Mar.15
Ringham, F. S. (temp.) 21June15		Rice-Jones, A. T. (temp.) 12Jan.15	Captains.
Sanderson, W. A. (temp.) 21June15		Dod, H. A. (temp.) 12Jan.15	Stoddart, E. B. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Slaughter, A. C. (temp.) 21June15		Blaher, J. R. (temp.) 11Feb.15	Hannay, A. H. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Smith, R. G. (temp.) 21June15		Brinson, H. N. (temp.) 12Feb.15	Adam, A. de B. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Standring, W. S. (temp.) 21June15		Smith, R. H. (temp.) 12Feb.15	Jager, B. M. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Stark, C. A. (temp.) 21June15		Poet, F. Y. (temp.) 12Feb.15	Ravenscroft, G. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Handyside, J. (temp.) 21July15		Lewis, E. T. (temp.) 1Apr.15	McDiarmid, C. H. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Hartles, W. E. (temp.) 21July15		Faris, S. J. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Clarke, G. A. E. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Herbert, L. A. (temp.) 21July15		Marshall, C. W. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Adam, A. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Lumley, G. Y. (temp.) 21July15		Draper, A. I. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Beasley, E. B. (temp.) 1Feb.15
Mackay, G. W. (temp.) 21July15		Lee, F. W. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Clayton, G. S. (temp.) 1Feb.15
Martin, N. T. (temp.) 21July15		Higgins, H. V. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Lieutenants.
Ross, P. G. (temp.) 21July15		Dakin, H. B. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Oatton, G. M. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Rothfield, I. (temp.) 21July15		Young, A. E. (temp.) 1Apr.15	Watkins, E. C. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Smith, J. M. (temp.) 21July15		Faithfull, L. E. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Brockbank, C. N. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Beaty, R. (temp.) 21July15		Lancaster, P. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Clover, A. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Harris, W. J. B. (temp.) 21July15		Bradshaw, J. W. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Williams, W. H. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Lea, R. R. (temp.) 21July15		Lashmar, J. W. I. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Wishy, R. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Platton, W. H. (temp.) 21July15		Kendall, W. J. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Ravenscroft, C. L. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Stevens, A. J. R. (temp.) 21July15		Walker, D. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Williams, H. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Templeton, R. B. (temp.) 21July15		Agnew, H. C. (temp.) 2Apr.15	2nd Lieutenants.
Johnson, C. H. (temp.) 21Aug.15		Roberts, C. L. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Stacey, E. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Thomas, T. G. (temp.) 21Aug.15		Schofield, T. R. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Pegram, S. D. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Billington, W. G. (temp.) 21Aug.15		Whitaker, G. H. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Morrell, A. C. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Reid, J. (temp.) 21Aug.15		Monkham, W. A. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Higson, C. M. (temp.) 28Sept.14
Taylor, N. L. (temp.) 21Aug.15		Cooke, H. R. (temp.) 2Apr.15	McLellan, G. A. (temp.) 28Nov.14
		Beckett, R. J. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Higson, J. N. (temp.) 28Dec.14
		Berry, C. W. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Pie-Brown, E. (temp.) 28Dec.14
		Ravner, W. L. (temp.) 2Apr.15	Kelly, C. M. (temp.) 28Jan.15
			Edmondson, T. R. (temp.) 28Jan.15
			Dodd, E. (temp.) 11Feb.15
			Sheard, F. M. (temp.) 11Feb.15
			Adam, C. (temp.) 4Mar.15
			Joseph, J. H. (temp.) 21Mar.15
			Merry, R. V. (temp.) 21Mar.15
			Beaumont, L. C. (temp.) 21Mar.15
			Glover, W. C. (temp.) 22Jan.15
			Griffin, D. M. (temp.) 2Apr.15
			Rayment, L. A. (temp.) 2Apr.15
			Thomas, B. A. B. (temp.) 2Apr.15
<b>Adjutant.</b>		<b>Adjutant.</b>	
de Wolf Capt. (temp.) H. F. 21Jan.15		Robinson, Capt. (temp.) H. H. 23Feb.15	
<b>Quarter-Master.</b>		<b>Quarter-Master.</b>	
Tomlinson, R. Hon. Lt. (temp.) 26Oct.14		Emery, C. A. Hon. Lt. (temp.) 21Mar.15	

984b	984c	984d	984e
------	------	------	------

**THE KING'S (LIVERPOOL REGIMENT)—(Regt. Dist. No.)—contd.**

**18th Bn.—contd.**  
*2nd Lt. contd.*  
 Wane, N. (temp.) 8Apr.15  
 Wane, H. (temp.) 8Apr.15  
 Walker, T. R. (temp.) 8Apr.15  
 Golds, G. B. (temp.) 8Apr.15  
 Leather, C. B. (temp.) 8Apr.15  
 Sentham, G. (temp.) 8Apr.15  
 Jessup, A. C. (temp.) 21Apr.15  
 11Jan.15  
 Winder, L. N. (temp.) 22May.15  
 Beaumont, E. P. (temp.) 23June.15  
 Barnes, F. (temp.) 7July.15  
 Power, W. H. (temp.) 8July.15  
 Prendiville, J. A. (temp.) 19July.15  
 Joseph, C. N. (temp.) 8Aug.15  
*Adjutant.*  
 Clayton, Lt. (temp.) G. H. 27Jan.15  
*Quarter-Master.*  
 Allison, G., hon. Lt. (temp.) 28Sept.14

**19th (Service) Battalion. (3rd City.)**

*In Command.*  
 Gosset, Maj. (temp. Lt.-Col.) K. F., ret. pay, p.s.o. (Lt.-Col. & Hon. Col. ret. Spec. Rec.) 18Sept.14  
*Major.*  
 (2nd in Command.)  
*Majors.*  
 Denham, L. S. (temp.) (Capt. Res. of Off.) 7Nov.14  
 Trant, R. B. (temp.) 1Apr.15  
 Laverton, H. C. (temp.) (Capt. Res. of Off.) 30July.15  
*Captains.*  
 Beckett, H. (temp.) 28Sept.14  
 Morrison, E. K. (temp.) 28Sept.14  
 Smith, H. A. (temp.) 28Sept.14  
 Fraser, W. (temp.) 1Jan.15  
 Bolton, C. E. (temp.) 1Jan.15  
 Willmer, H. T. (temp.) 1Jan.15  
 Dodd, A. L. (temp.) 1Jan.15  
 Ziegler, A. C. (temp.) 16July.15  
 Willmer, W. (temp.) 16July.15  
 Roberts, J. H. (temp.) 16July.15  
*Lieutenants.*  
 Salisbury, C. K. (temp.) 28Sept.14  
 Jones, H. M. (temp.) 28Sept.14  
 Lancaster, A. N. (temp.) 28Sept.14  
 Lancaster, C. P. (temp.) 28Sept.14  
 Bickersteth, J. (temp.) 1Feb.15  
 Dawson, G. M. (temp.) 1Feb.15  
 Fisher, W. E. (temp.) 1Apr.15  
 Serginson, J. N. (temp.) 1Apr.15

*Lieutenants—contd.*  
 Tetlow, H. (temp.) 16July.15  
 Riley, N. (temp.) 16July.15  
 Mason, G. W. (temp.) 16July.15  
*2nd Lieutenants.*  
 Squarley, O. N. (temp.) 28Sept.14  
 Stuart, P. D. (temp.) 28Sept.14  
 Grannan, G. (temp.) 28Sept.14  
 Carver, H. Q. (temp.) 28Sept.14  
 Hough, E. B. (temp.) 16Jan.15  
 Coulnden, E. S. (temp.) 18Jan.15  
 Nickson, W. (temp.) 18Jan.15  
 Trant, N. (temp.) 18Jan.15  
 Lloyd, R. G. (temp.) 8Feb.15  
 Newport, C. H. (temp.) 27Mar.15  
 Collins, A. V. (temp.) 22Mar.15  
 Biggs, C. W. (temp.) 22Mar.15  
 Prescott, A. F. E. (temp.) 22Mar.15  
 Sharples, G. W. (temp.) 8Apr.15  
 Sharples, H. (temp.) 8Apr.15  
 Ashcroft, W. (temp.) 7Apr.15  
 Sinclair, W. (temp.) 8Apr.15  
 Cochran, W. B. (temp.) 8Apr.15  
 Smith, H. L. (temp.) 28Apr.15  
 Vaughan, Roberts, R. W. (temp.) 6June.15  
*Adjutant.*  
 Fraser, Capt. (temp.) W. 1Feb.15  
*Quarter-Master.*  
 Osborn, J., hon. Lt. (temp.) 28Sept.14

**20th (Service) Battalion. (4th City.)**

*In Command.*  
 Cobham, Maj. (temp. Lt.-Col.) H. W., Res. of Off., ret. Ind. Army 9May.15  
*Major.*  
 (2nd in Command.)  
 Smith, W. A. (temp.) 8Feb.15  
 8Nov.14  
*Major.*  
 Watson, C. N. (temp.) 8Apr.15  
*Captains.*  
 Holt, P. D. (temp.) 14Nov.14  
 Taylor, J. S. (temp.) 18Nov.14  
 18Sept.14  
 Laird, R. E. (temp.) 18Nov.14  
 18Sept.14  
 Greenshields, J. D. (temp.) 28Nov.14  
 Whiting, T. (temp.) (Lt. 1 natted.) 27Nov.14  
 18Jan.15  
 Beazley, A. T. (temp.) 28Jan.15

*Captains—contd.*  
 Hicks, W. L. (temp.) 15Feb.15  
 Orford, E. C. (temp.) 14Apr.15  
*Lieutenants.*  
 Pemberton, P. R. (temp.) 15Feb.15  
 Hume, R. S. (temp.) 19Feb.15  
 Munro, R. (temp.) 14Apr.15  
 Grant, A. B. (temp.) 16June.15  
 Bradshaw, G. H. (temp.) 18June.15  
 Paterson, R. D. (temp.) 18June.15  
 Moly, R. M. (temp.) 18June.15

**2nd Lieutenants.**

Grant, G. (temp.) 9Nov.14  
 Grime, F. H. (temp.) 9Nov.14  
 Bannister, T. (temp.) 11Nov.14  
 Paton, G. MacP. (temp.) 27Nov.14  
 Brighthouse, G. A. (temp.) 27Nov.14  
 Johnston, A. V. (temp.) 27Nov.14  
 Jowett, W. H. (temp.) 27Nov.14  
 Macalister, W. C. (temp.) 27Nov.14  
 Little, R. M. (temp.) 27Nov.14  
 Holden, A. H. (temp.) 18Jan.15  
 Dawson, A. (temp.) 18Jan.15  
 Hick, H. C. (temp.) 8Feb.15  
 Lancaster, H. (temp.) 16Mar.15  
 Sutton, G. S. (temp.) 16Mar.15  
 Young, W. (temp.) 16Mar.15  
 Nixon, J. G. (temp.) 16Mar.15  
 Gooch, S. (temp.) 8Apr.15  
 Musker, J. W. (temp.) 7Apr.15  
 Laurie, A. O. (temp.) 10Apr.15  
 Dalton, C. H. C. (temp.) 19Apr.15  
 24Nov.14  
 Whitlaw, W. H. (temp.) 6July.15

**Adjutant.**

Bracken, 2nd Lt. (temp. Lt.) H., R. W. Kent E 8Feb.15  
 (temp. Lt. in Army 2Feb.15)

**Quarter-Master.**

Dawson, A. C., hon. Lt. (temp.) 19Nov.14

**21st (Reserve) Battalion.**

**In Command.**

King, Lt. Col. (temp.) H. C., late Capt. 3 Bn. Shrops. L.I. (Mila.) (Lt. ret., late 88th Foot) 12Aug.15

**Major. (2nd in Command.)**

**Majors.**

**Captains.**

**Lieutenants.**

**2nd Lieutenants.**

**Adjutant.**

**Quarter-Master.**

**1st Dock Battalion.**

*In Command.*  
 Derby, Lt.-Col. (temp.) H. Hon. E. G. V., Earl of G.C.V.O., O.B. 2Apr.15

*Captain.*  
 Tattersall, G. (temp.) 7July.15

*Adjutant.*  
 Williams, Maj. (temp.) R. F. 8Apr.15  
 (temp. Maj. in Army 7July.15)













---

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

---

### INDEX

- Abercromby's expedition, Sir Ralph, 78.  
Afghan campaign, 125.  
Agra, battle of, 103; fighting at, 109.  
Aisne, battle of the, 139; Liverpools save the guns, 142.  
Alexandria, march on, 78.  
Army List of September 1915, extract from, 199.  
  
Badge presented by George I, 61.  
Bagley, Major W., 113.  
Bannatyne, Lieut.-Col. W. S., 145  
"Bantam" Battalion, 181.  
Battle honours, 61, 81, 89, 101, 129, 130.  
Bavaria, difficulties of march to, 16.  
Baynes, Capt., narrative of, 97.  
Beale, Major Edgar Metcalfe, 157.  
Beaumont, Lieut.-Col. John, 3, 8.  
Berwick, the Duke of, 6.  
Blenheim, battle of, 25; enemy's preparations for, 24; map of march to, 16; plan of, 27; position of King's Liverpools at, 27.  
Bolland, Major, 174, 175.  
Bounty Roll, the Blenheim, 31.  
Bousfield, Capt., 160.  
Boyne, battle of the, 8.  
Brown, Private John, 95.  
Brown, Trooper Thomas, 65.  
Burmese campaign, the, 129.  
  
Campbell, Capt., 88.  
Canada, guerilla warfare in, 76; service in, 81.  
Carter, Colonel, 146.  
Case, Private P., narrative of, 134.  
Casualties, regiment's, 20, 31, 42, 60, 66, 70, 79, 85, 89, 101, 129, 144, 171, 172; roll of honour, 187-191.  
  
Cawnpore, fighting at, 106.  
Collins, Private, 178.  
Cooney, Lieut.-Col. J. A., 170.  
Culloden, battle of, 69.  
Cumberland, Duke of, dispatch quoted, 69.  
Cutts, Lord, 13, 28.  
  
Davies, Sergt., narrative of, 142.  
Delhi, siege of, 95.  
Derby family's association with Fifth Battalion, 161.  
Dettingen, battle of, 61; map of, 62.  
Dock Battalion, the, 182.  
Dunblane, battle of, 60.  
  
Egyptian campaign, 78; map of, 78.  
Eighth Battalion, the, 169.  
Equipment, *see* Uniform.  
Eustace, Capt., 82.  
Evans, Major, exploits of, 86, 89.  
  
Fagan, Major, 170.  
Falkirk, battle of, 69.  
Fenelan, Corporal A., narrative of, 162.  
Ferrers, Lord, of Chartley, 3.  
Festubert, battle of, 165.  
Fifth Battalion, 161.  
Flanders, service in, 77.  
Fontenoy, battle of, 66; map of, 67.  
Fort Cedars, capture of, 74.  
Fort St. Michael, storming of, 13.  
*Forty-one Years in India* (Lord Roberts) quoted, 125.  
Foster, Capt. G., 73.  
Fourth Battalion, 156.  
French, Sir John, dispatches quoted, 138, 141; praise from, 144, 172.

## *The King's (Liverpool Regiment)*

- Ganges Bridge, defence of, 108.  
Garibaldi, portrait of, 161.  
Geluk Farm, action at, 117.  
Greathed, General Sir E. H., 96, 99, 100, 104, 111.  
Guernsey, garrison duty at, 92.
- Haig, Sir Douglas, praise from, 175.  
Haines, Sir Paul Frederick, G.C.B., inspection by, 128.  
Hampson, Piper, 177.  
Hartley, Colonel, 92.  
Heaton, Private William, V.C., 118.  
Heaton, Sergt., V.C., 120.  
Helvetia, defence of, 120.  
Helvoetsluys, privations on voyage to, 11.  
Hill 60, 146.  
*History of the South African War* (Sir Frederick Maurice) quoted, 121.  
Holland, campaign in, 69.  
Honours, lists of, 31, 111, 122, 123, 141, 147-152, 155, 156, 157-159, 163, 166, 173, 176, 179, 182, 192-197.  
Hutchinson, Lieut., 165.
- India, garrison duty, 130.  
Ireland, service in, 8.
- Jones, Sergt.-Major, 145.
- "King's," the, 58.  
Knight, Corporal, V.C., 119.  
Kudsiabagh Water Bastion, storming of the, 96.
- Ladysmith, siege of, 116.  
Lahore Gate, taking of the, 99.  
Lauffeld, the King's at, 69.  
Lille, siege of, 49, 51.  
Little Geete, action on the, 36.  
Liverpool Scottish, *see* Tenth Battalion.  
Lloyd, Lieut.-Col., 174.  
Lucknow, march on, 104; relief of, 105.  
Lundy's Lane, encounter at, 88.
- MacCorquodale, Colonel, 174.  
McDonough, Private, 157.
- Malplaquet, battle of, 54; map of, 55.  
Marlborough, Duke of, praise from, 15; letter from quoted, 17.  
Martinique, capture of, 81.  
Memorials to the Regiment at Liverpool, 111, 185.  
Menin, siege of, 42.  
Mons, battle of, 133; retreat from, 135.  
Morrison, Henry, succeeds General Webb, 59.  
Munition Question in 1801, 79.
- Neale, Lieut.-Col., A.H.C., 170.  
Neuve Chapelle, attack on, 145.  
Niagara River, engagement on the, 84.  
Nimeguen, battle of, 12.  
Ninth Battalion, the, 173.  
*Notes on the Agra Revolt* (Raikes) quoted, 103.
- Ogdensburg, engagement at, 82.  
Ogilvie, Major, 84, 85.  
Ostend Convoy, protection of, 50.  
Oudenarde, battle of, 43; plan of, 45; three battalions surrender to Queen's, 46.
- "Pals" Battalion, 181.  
Parker, Capt., *Memoirs* quoted, 14.  
Peiwar Kotal, battle of the, 127.  
Persian Gulf expedition, 154.  
Peshawar, service of Second Battalion at, 153.  
Portsmouth Captains, the, 7.  
"Press Guards," the, *see* Ninth Battalion.  
"Princess Anne of Denmark's Regiment of Foot," the, 3.  
"Queens," the, first time so called, 12.
- Ramillies, battle of, 39; plan of, 41; position of armies at, 39.  
Ramsey, Lieut.-Col., 56, 175.  
Robinson, Trooper William, letter quoted, 64.  
Roll of Honour, 187-191.  
Royal Warrant, the, 3.
- Sackett's Harbour, fight at, 86

---

## *Index*

---

- St. Leger, Colonel Barry, 77.  
St. Lucia, capture of, 77.  
"Salamander," the, *see* Cutts.  
Sandi Fort, capture of, 110.  
Schellenberg, battle of the, 18.  
Second Battalion, history of the, 70, 90; fresh formation of, 124.  
Seventh Battalion, the, 166.  
Sheffield Reservoir, bursting of, 113.  
Sixth Battalion, 164.  
Smith, Private W., 175.  
Snake Hill, attack on, 89.  
Special Reserve Battalions, 154.  
Stanwix, Colonel, 71.  
Stanwix, siege of Fort, 77.  
Stoney Creek, battle of, 85.  
Strength of regiment, varying, 3, 5, 32, 38, 52, 70, 81, 90, 92, 108, 109, 111, 114, 122, 124, 128, 132, 154, 156, 169.  
Tenth Battalion, 177.  
Territorial Battalions, the, 160.  
Third Battalion, 154.  
Titles of Regiment, varying, 3, 12, 56, 58, 63, 70, 114, 154.  
Tombs, Lance-Corporal Joseph, V.C., 151, 165.  
Toronto, battle of, 83.  
Tournay, investment of, 52.  
Trench warfare, 34; eighteenth century and modern day compared, 53.  
Trophies, King's, at Chelsea Hospital, 83.  
Uniform and equipment, 4, 61, 70, 94, 166, 174, 181.  
Vaudreuil, engagement at, 75.  
Victoria Cross, three awards, 119.  
Vendôme, Marshal, quoted, 50.  
Venloo, siege of, 13.  
Walker, Colour-Sergt., 98.  
Walker, Sergt., 138.  
Watts, Lieut.-Col., 174.  
Webb, Brig.-General Richmond, 12, 30, 46, 48, 50, 51, 56, 59.  
"White Horse of Hanover," the, 61.  
White, Sir George, praise from, 115, 116.  
"Wolfe's Boys," 69.  
Wynendale, action at, 50.  
Ypres, service at, 144.

*OTHER VOLUMES IN THIS SERIES ARE—*

**THE OXFORDSHIRE AND BUCKINGHAMSHIRE LIGHT INFANTRY.** By Sir HENRY NEWBOLT. Cloth 6s. net, by post 8s. ; sheepskin 10s. 6d. net, by post 11s.

**THE ROYAL SCOTS.** By LAWRENCE WEAVER. With a Preface by the EARL OF ROSEBERY, K.G., K.T. Cloth 7s. 6d. net, by post 8s. ; sheepskin 12s. 6d. net, by post 13s.

**THE ROYAL WELSH FUSILIERS.** By H. AVRAY TIPPING. 7s. 6d. net, by post 8s. ; sheepskin 12s. 6d. net, by post 13s.

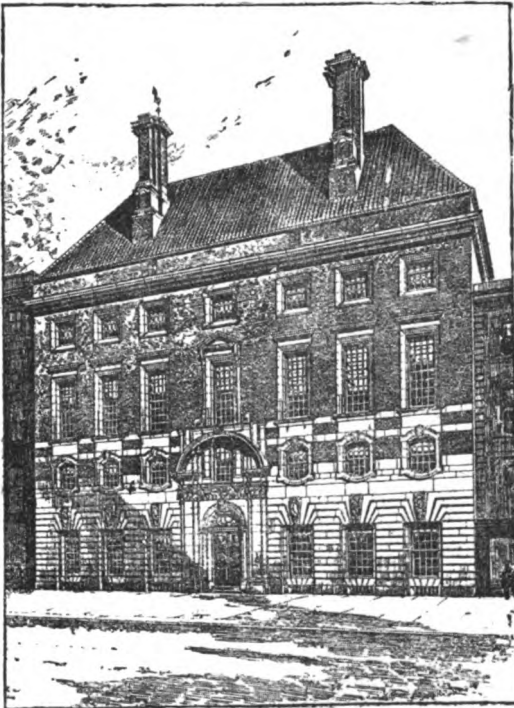
**THE O.T.C. AND THE GREAT WAR.** By Capt. ALAN R. HAIG-BROWN. With a Preface by Colonel SIR EDWARD WARD, Bart., K.C.B., K.C.V.O. Cloth 7s. 6d. net, by post 8s. ; sheepskin 12s. 6d. net, by post 13s.

**THE MIDDLESEX REGIMENT.** By C. L. KINGSFORD. Cloth 7s. 6d. net, by post 8s. ; sheepskin 12s. 6d. net, by post 13s. [Ready October.

*OTHER VOLUMES IN PREPARATION.*

A  
**CATALOGUE OF BOOKS**

**PUBLISHED AT THE  
OFFICES OF "COUNTRY LIFE"**



**20, TAVISTOCK STREET, COVENT GARDEN,  
LONDON, W.C.**

Q



---

## *The "Country Life" Library*

---

### A NEW SERIES OF ARCHITECTURAL BOOKS.

THE PROPRIETORS OF "COUNTRY LIFE" have pleasure in announcing an important series of Architectural Monographs under the general editorship of Lawrence Weaver, F.S.A., Hon. A.R.I.B.A.

The series will include books by authors of acknowledged authority on the work of great architects of the past, such as the Brothers Adam; on the architectural development of the minor arts of Plasterwork, Ironwork and the like; and on individual features of buildings, such as Fireplaces and Chimneypieces, Staircases and Panelled Rooms. The volumes will be uniform in size, type and style of binding. Two are now ready, and six more are in active preparation. The prices at which they are published will vary with the number of pages in each volume, but in all cases will be much lower than ever before attempted for books so fully and finely illustrated.

*THE FIRST TWO VOLUMES IN THE SERIES ARE:*  
HOUSES AND GARDENS BY E. L. LUTYENS.

GRINLING GIBBONS AND THE WOODWORK OF HIS AGE.

*OTHER VOLUMES IN PREPARATION ARE:*  
THE WORK OF THE BROTHERS ADAM, by ARTHUR T. BOLTON, F.S.A., F.R.I.B.A.

DECORATIVE PLASTERWORK, by LAURENCE TURNER.

WROUGHT IRONWORK: GATES, RAILINGS AND SCREENS, by MAXWELL AYRTON.

ENGLISH PANELLED ROOMS, by W. H. WARD, M.A.Cantab., F.S.A., A.R.I.B.A.

ENGLISH FIREPLACES AND CHIMNEYPIECES, by WALTER H. GODFREY.

STAIRCASES: THEIR DESIGN AND DECORATION, by SIR HERBERT JEKYLL and H. AVRAY TIPPING, M.A., F.S.A.

---

*The "Country Life" Library*

---

# HOUSES AND GARDENS BY E. L. LUTYENS

Described and criticised by  
LAWRENCE WEAVER

*Large crown folio (16 by 11), bound in quarter buckram, gilt, 25/- net; in half morocco, 35/- net; by post, 10d. extra*

---

NEARLY 400 PAGES AND 600 SUPERB ILLUSTRATIONS

This book is lavishly illustrated with photographs of about eighty of Mr. Lutyens' most typical houses and gardens, many of which have never previously been published. Interspersed in the text is a large number of plans, and there is an appendix of 22 pages giving a valuable series of scale drawings of typical buildings. The subjects are accompanied by descriptions and critical appreciations which incidentally throw considerable light on the general development of the domestic building of to-day. In all respects the book is the most important and interesting monograph on the work of an architect yet published.

*The Scotsman* says: "Among the English architects whose work has saved modern domestic architecture from the reproach of merely handing down the traditions of a lost art, none has done more or better work than Mr. E. L. Lutyens. . . . Mr. Lawrence Weaver has written a learned and judicious appreciation of the work of this busy and indefatigable master-builder, which covers an extraordinarily large and varied field. . . . Architects and students of architecture will pronounce it valuable in itself and of good promise for the series in which it appears."

*The Morning Post* says: "The publication of Mr. Weaver's work on the buildings and career of Mr. Lutyens is . . . an event in the world of architecture."

*The Manchester Guardian* says: "It is only when we see a publication such as this that we realise what quality characterises some of the building of to-day. Abundantly and splendidly illustrated, this book shows the work of a great master, whose influence is even greater than his most enthusiastic admirers can appreciate."

*The Irish Times* says: "The book is perfect of its kind. Nothing but praise is due to the arrangement; indexing, appendices, and general appearance of this most attractive volume."

*The Aberdeen Free Press* says: "It is a welcome and valuable addition to the modern literature of architecture."

# GRINLING GIBBONS & the Woodwork of his Age

(1648-1720)

By H. AVRAY TIPPING, M.A., F.S.A.

250 MAGNIFICENT ILLUSTRATIONS,  
INCLUDING MEASURED DRAWINGS

*Quarter bound in buckram, gilt, 25/- net; half-bound in morocco, 35/- net; by post, 10d. extra.*

THE Publishers feel that they could not possibly have secured a more able pen than that of Mr. H. Avray Tipping to describe the work of the greatest carver in wood that the Renaissance produced. The Author's profound knowledge of the period and his intimate acquaintance with the art of Gibbons in all its manifestations give an unquestioned authority to a volume which, for the first time, gathers together a superb body of illustrations and detailed descriptions of all his best work.

It may indeed be stated with entire confidence that this volume is a complete and satisfying work of reference on the subject with which it deals.

"The proprietors of COUNTRY LIFE are rendering admirable service with their series of Architectural Monographs. In writing a life of Gibbons, Mr. Avray Tipping had by no means an easy task, but with painstaking care he has collected all the available material, skilfully focussed it, and for the first time we have Gibbons presented in true perspective. But Mr. Tipping's work is of more than biographical value. Equipped obviously with wide knowledge of his subject, he has written a comprehensive and luminous account of what may be described as the golden age of wood carving in England."—*The Glasgow Herald*.

"The book is rich in lessons for architects and amateurs of fine woodwork."—*The Scotsman*.

"Ought to find a place in the library of every architect, and, indeed, of everyone who is interested in decorative arts and the progress of British craftsmanship."—*Aberdeen Free Press*.

---

*The "Country Life" Library*

---

# WINDSOR CASTLE

AN ARCHITECTURAL HISTORY

Collected and written by command of Their Majesties QUEEN VICTORIA  
KING EDWARD VII and KING GEORGE V.

By SIR WILLIAM H. ST. JOHN HOPE, Litt.D., D.C.L.

*Imperial Quarto, in Two Volumes, and a Portfolio. Bound in Half Sheepskin,  
£6 6s. net; Whole Sheepskin, £8 8s. net; Full Morocco, £10 10s. net.*

Windsor Castle stands alone among the buildings of Great Britain. It is the greatest among our early fortresses and the most splendid of Royal Palaces. The story of English Building during eight centuries is very fully written in the stones of Windsor, but not so that everyone may read. The slow accretions of centuries are not easy to disentangle, and it needed the skill and wide archaeological experience of Sir William H. St. John Hope to set out in its true proportions the fascinating story of the growth of this great architectural organism.

The edition is limited to 1,050 numbered copies, of which nearly 400 were subscribed prior to publication. It has been printed from new type on pure rag paper, specially made for this edition. It is illustrated by exquisite reproductions in colour of drawings by Paul Sandby; by a large number of collotype plates reproducing a unique collection of original drawings, engravings and photographs which show the Castle at every stage of its development; as well as by beautiful woodcuts, prepared expressly by the great engraver Orlando Jewitt for this History, when it was first projected. Many of the illustrations are reproduced for the first time, by special permission of His Majesty the King, from originals in the Royal Library at Windsor.

The work is issued in two sumptuous volumes, together with a portfolio containing a notable reproduction of Norden's View of Windsor and a complete series of plans, specially printed in fourteen colours, which show the dates of all the buildings in the Castle and their successive changes.

*The Times* says: "A piece of historical research and reconstruction of which all who have been concerned in it may be proud."

*The Manchester Guardian* says: "It may at once be safely said that no monograph on a single building has ever before been attempted on such a scale, or has been carried out in so sumptuous and at the same time so scholarly a manner."

---

*The "Country Life" Library*

---

# IN ENGLISH HOMES

Illustrating the architectural character, decorations and  
furniture of some of the most notable Houses of England

*Volumes I, II and III*

AND

## ENGLISH HOMES OF THE EARLY RENAISSANCE

(ELIZABETHAN AND JACOBEOAN HOUSES AND GARDENS)

EDITED BY

H. AVRAY TIPPING, M.A., F.S.A.

*£2 2s. net each. By post, £2 8s.*

These four notable volumes form together an unequalled pictorial survey of the domestic architecture of England of every style and period. They are, moreover, a treasury, not only of the life stories of the notable men and women who have lived in our historic homes, but of those county and village traditions which throw so much light on the larger issues that have made the history of the nation.

"A veritable revelation of the wealth of internal adornments, architectural and other, contained in the great country mansions of England. To turn over the pages is to obtain keen pleasure, as well as enlightenment, concerning a treasury of domestic art and archæology which to a large extent is kept closed from the common eye."—*Scotsman*.

---

The "Country Life" Library

---

# GARDENS OLD AND NEW

The Country House and  
its Garden Environment

EDITED BY

H. AVRAY TIPPING, M.A., F.S.A.

The illustrations being from Photographs specially taken

by CHARLES LATHAM

*Crown folio (15 in. by 10 in.). Handsomely bound in cloth, gilt edges*

VOLUMES I, II AND III

£2 2s. net each.

By post, £2 3s.

These three volumes illustrate the relationship between house and garden, and the beauties of every type of garden, both formal and natural, in a way never before attempted. They afford a complete survey of the whole history of garden design and garden architecture, considered from every point of view, historical, artistic and horticultural.

"These beautiful books owe their charm to the wonderful collection of photographs of gardens and garden architecture which such a paper as COUNTRY LIFE has had a unique opportunity of making. The principle conveyed in the letterpress is that held by all great gardeners and architects—that house and garden are, or should be, intimately associated, and that the character of the possessors should be reflected in both. The accounts of lovely garden after lovely garden are most agreeable reading. There is no country in the world where man-created sylvan beauty can be found comparable to this in England, and as albums of charming pictures for the garden lovers and a mine of elegant suggestion to the garden-maker, these volumes are the best thing of their kind we have ever seen."—*Daily Chronicle*.

---

## *The "Country Life" Library*

---

Uniform with "*Small Country Houses of To-day*," "*Small Country Houses : Their Repair and Enlargement*," and "*The House and Its Equipment*."

# GARDENS for SMALL COUNTRY HOUSES

By GERTRUDE JEKYLL  
AND LAWRENCE WEAVER

*Third edition, revised and enlarged, large 4to, cloth gilt, 15/- net*

*By post (inland), 15/7; Foreign and Colonial Post, 16/7*

800 PAGES, AND OVER 400 ILLUSTRATIONS,  
WITH COLOURED FRONTISPIECE

Amongst the vast number of books on all aspects of gardening this volume takes a new and distinctive place. It deals with garden design as a whole, with reference both to the proportions and architectural elements which govern a successful plan, and to right and artistic planting. The first seven chapters describe in detail some beautiful gardens of varying type which illustrate the solving of different problems. Very important are the planting plans by Miss Jekyll, whose reputation as a deviser of colour schemes is world-wide. In other chapters the treatment of various kinds of sites is discussed in detail, with scores of plans and photographs of examples by well known designers. The chief architectural features of gardens, such as pergolas, pools and fountains, walls, steps and paving, garden houses, seats and sundials, are described with a lavish series of illustrations. Others deal with cultural problems such as the planting of retaining walls and the use of climbing plants. The illustrations are of a beauty and educational value impossible to over-estimate. No owner of a small country house who wishes to improve its garden can afford to be without this notable book.

*The Spectator* says : " There could be no more helpful book than this to consult."

---

## The "Country Life" Library

---

*Uniform with "Small Country Houses: Their Repair and Enlargement,"  
"Gardens for Small Country Houses," and "The House and Its Equipment."*

### SMALL COUNTRY HOUSES OF TO-DAY

Edited by LAWRENCE WEAVER

*Large quarto, cloth, gilt, 15/- net;*

*by post (inland) 15/6. Foreign and Colonial Post, 16/6*

**224 PAGES, 800 ILLUSTRATIONS**

This volume fills a distinctive place, because not only is the picked work of more than forty of the best architects of the day shown by plan and photograph, but it is discussed in detail, frankly yet sympathetically. As the houses illustrated, nearly fifty in all, vary from whitewashed week-end cottages costing less than £500 to dignified country homes costing £5,000, all sorts of internal arrangement and architectural and garden treatment are brought under review. To all of moderate means who contemplate building a country house, this book will be of the utmost value.

---

*Uniform with "Gardens for Small Country Houses," "Small Country Houses of To-day," and "Small Country Houses: Their Repair and Enlargement."*

### THE HOUSE AND ITS EQUIPMENT

Edited by LAWRENCE WEAVER

*Large quarto, cloth, gilt, 15/- net;*

*by post (inland) 15/6. Foreign and Colonial Post, 16/6*

**212 PAGES, 240 ILLUSTRATIONS**

It is impossible that any one writer can deal with the many problems that arise out of the artistic and practical equipment of a house, at least with equal knowledge and sympathy. The scheme of this volume, with its forty-three chapters contributed by twenty-three experts of acknowledged ability, ensures the throwing of fresh light on scores of questions that concern the comfort and pleasure of everyone. To all who own a home, and are not wholly satisfied with it, and to all who contemplate improving an existing house or building anew, this volume will be of the utmost value.



---

## *The "Country Life" Library*

---

*Uniform with "Small Country Houses of To-day," "Gardens for Small Country Houses," and "The House and Its Equipment."*

### **SMALL COUNTRY HOUSES:**

**THEIR REPAIR AND ENLARGEMENT**

**Forty Examples Chosen from Five Centuries**

**By LAWRENCE WEAVER**

*Large quarto, cloth, gilt, 15/- net. By post (inland) 15/6. Foreign and Colonial post, 16/6. Nearly 250 pages and 300 illustrations*

The growing tendency to rescue old buildings from neglect and the important problems which are raised by such work prompted the issue of this book. Detailed descriptions reveal how houses of bygone days have been re-equipped as modern needs demand, without destroying the witness they bear to the old traditions of building. Incidentally, the author has shown in how many cases the records of modest little houses have been preserved, and how intimately their local story is woven into the larger fabric of national history. The book is an invaluable guide to all who are desirous of repairing an old house, and who wish to achieve it in the right spirit.

---

### **THE "COUNTRY LIFE" BOOK OF COTTAGES** COSTING FROM £150 TO £600

**By LAWRENCE WEAVER**

*Large 8vo, cloth, gilt, 5/- net. By post (inland) 5/5. Foreign & Colonial post, 6/- . Nearly 250 pages and 300 illustrations and plans*

The aim of this phenomenally successful book is to set out some of the problems and conditions imposed by varying limits of cost, and to show how modern architects have succeeded in providing convenient and successful cottages at reasonable prices. In this book full consideration has been given to all types of cottages—for the rural labourer, the estate servant, the small-holder, the clerk who lives outside the town, the "week-ender," and those of limited means who want a permanent home of refined character in the country at the smallest possible cost.

It is an indispensable book to all estate owners; to everyone who contemplates building a cottage of any sort, and to all who are interested in Housing questions.

---

## *The "Country Life" Library*

---

### OUR COMMON SEA-BIRDS

CORMORANTS, TERNS, GULLS, SKUAS, PETRELS, AND AUKS

By PERCY R. LOWE, B.A., M.B., B.C.

With Chapters by BENTLEY BEETHAM, FRANCIS HEATHERLEY, W. R. OGILVIE-GRANT, OLIVER G. PIKE, W. P. PYCRAFT, A. J. ROBERTS, etc.

*Large quarto, cloth, gilt, with over 300 pages and nearly 250 illustrations. 15/- net. Post free (inland) 15/7*

Unlike the majority of books dealing with birds, this volume is of interest to the general reader and to the student of ornithology alike.

It is a book that enables the reader to identify our Sea-birds by name, to understand their movements, their habits, their nests and their eggs.

*The Observer* says:—"We marvel at the snapshots that have been taken of birds. Every movement of their flight is now recorded: the taking off, the alighting, the swooping, the settling, the 'planing,' the struggling against the wind. And they are just the birds which the ordinary man wants to know about, because he has such opportunities of seeing them for himself on any walk along the cliff."

---

### THE PEREGRINE FALCON AT THE EYRIE

By FRANCIS HEATHERLEY, F.R.C.S.

Illustrated with wonderful photographs by the AUTHOR and C. J. KING.

*Demy quarto, cloth, gilt, 5/- net; by inland post, 5/6*

This fascinating book on the Peregrine Falcon—the grandest bird of prey left in England—combines the salient facts of almost innumerable field notes, *written at the eyrie itself*. It is a book that should appeal with irresistible force to all true nature lovers. Many striking and unexpected facts were revealed to the author as a result of unwearied patience in a diminutive hut slung from the precipice of a lonely islet. These records are now set forth in a wonderful narrative which discloses the life history of the Peregrine Falcon from the moment of its hatching to the day it finally leaves the eyrie.

*The Times* says:—"We commend this faithful and truly scientific inquiry to all lovers of animals and to those who are in quest of a real knowledge of nature."

---

## The "Country Life" Library

---

# Pastime with Good Company

Pictured by G. D. ARMOUR

With an Introduction by HORACE G. HUTCHINSON

*Royal quarto, tastefully bound, gilt, 15/- net; by inland post, 15/6*

**CONTAINING OVER FIFTY CHOICE PLATES,  
THOROUGHLY TYPICAL OF MR. ARMOUR'S ART**

This volume is sure of a warm welcome from every Sportsman and Sportswoman of to-day. In the beautiful picture gallery disclosed through its pages, Mr. Armour presents a wonderfully representative collection of his art. Whether it is the field in "full cry," the grouse coming over the heather, the polo player dashing towards the goal, or the otter hound surging through the rapids, all are portrayed with individuality and fidelity, by means which have the appealing merit of simplicity and directness. The plates are perfect specimens of pictorial art. Each one deserves, and, indeed, demands, a frame.

"A book for every sportsman's library."—*Liverpool Courier*.

---

## The "Country Life" Library of Sport

Edited by HORACE G. HUTCHINSON

**12/6 net each volume.**

*By post, 6d. extra*

A Series devoted to Sport and Pastime; each branch being dealt with by the most qualified experts on the subjects which they have made peculiarly their own.

### **CRICKET**

With over 80 Illustrations taken from the most interesting of the old cricketing prints. One Volume.

### **FISHING**

With Coloured Plates of Salmon and Trout Flies. Over 250 full-page Illustrations and numerous diagrams. In Two Volumes.

### **BIG GAME SHOOTING**

With over 200 Illustrations from photographs showing animals in their actual habitat and natural environment. In Two Volumes.

### **POLO, PAST AND PRESENT**

The game is traced from its cradle in Persia, many centuries back, up to the present time. Profusely Illustrated. In One Volume.

Mr. Hutchinson and his colleagues have done their work thoroughly."—*The Globe*.

### **GOLF GREENS AND GREEN KEEPING**

By HORACE G. HUTCHINSON. Cheap Edition, 5s. net; by post, 5s. 4d.

"The practical worth of the volume is nearly equal to the combined worth of all the books that have been written on the theory and practice of golf."—

*Yorkshire Post.*

---

## The "Country Life" Library

---

### "Country Life" Library of Garden Books

#### THE CENTURY BOOK OF GARDENING

*Edited by E. T. COOK. A Comprehensive Work for every Lover of the Garden. 624 pages, with about 600 illustrations, many of them full-page 4to (12in. by 8½in.). 21s. net. By post 21s. 10d.*

"No department of gardening is neglected, and the illustrations of famous and beautiful gardens and of the many winsome achievements of the gardener's art are so numerous and attractive as to make the veriest cockney yearn to turn gardener. If *THE CENTURY BOOK OF GARDENING* does not make all who see it covet their neighbours' gardens through sheer despair of ever making for themselves such gardens as are there illustrated, it should, at any rate, inspire everyone who desires to have a garden with an ambition to make it as beautiful as he can."—*Times*.

#### GARDENING FOR BEGINNERS

*(A Handbook to the Garden.) By E. T. COOK. Coloured plates and over 200 illustrations, plans and diagrams from photographs of selected specimens of Plants, Flowers, Trees, Shrubs, Fruits, etc. Sixth Edition. 12s. 6d. net. By post, 13s.*

"One cannot speak in too high praise of the idea that led Mr. E. T. Cook to compile this *GARDENING FOR BEGINNERS*, and of the completeness and succinctness with which the idea has been carried out. Nothing is omitted. . . . It is a book that will be welcomed with enthusiasm in the world of gardeners."—*Morning Post*.

#### WALL AND WATER GARDENS

*With Chapters on the Rock Garden, the Heath Garden and the Paved Water Garden. 5th Edition. Revised and Enlarged. By GERTRUDE Jekyll. Containing instructions and hints on the cultivation of suitable plants on dry walls, rock walls, in streams, marsh pools, lakes, ponds, tanks and water margins. With 200 illustrations. Large 8vo, 220 pages. 12s. 6d. net. By post, 12s. 11d.*

"He who will consent to follow Miss Jekyll aright will find that under her guidance the old walls, the stone steps, the rockeries, the ponds, or streamlets of his garden will presently blossom with all kinds of flowers undreamed of, and become marvels of varied foliage."—*Times*.

#### COLOUR SCHEMES FOR THE FLOWER GARDEN

*By GERTRUDE Jekyll. With over 100 illustrations and planting plans. Third Edition. 12s. 6d. net. By post, 13s.*

"Miss Jekyll is one of the most stimulating of those who write about what may be called the pictorial side of gardening. . . . She has spent a lifetime in learning how to grow and place flowers so as to make the most beautiful and satisfying effects, and she has imparted the fruits of her experience in these delightful pages."—*Daily Mail*.

#### THE FRUIT GARDEN

*By GEORGE BUNYARD and OWEN THOMAS. 507 pages. Six, 10½in. by 7½in. 12s. 6d. net. By post, 13s.*

"Without any doubt the best book of the sort yet published. There is a separate chapter for every kind of fruit, and each chapter is a book in itself—there is, in fact, everything that anyone can need or wish for in order to succeed in fruit growing. The book simply teems with illustrations, diagrams, and outlines."—*Journal of the Royal Horticultural Society*.

---

## The "Country Life" Library

---

### LILIES FOR ENGLISH GARDENS

*Written and compiled by GERTRUDE JEKYLL. 8s. 6d. net. By post, 8s. 10d.*

"LILIES FOR ENGLISH GARDENS is a volume in the COUNTRY LIFE Library, and it is almost sufficiently high commendation to say that the book is worthy of the journal. Miss Jekyll's aim has been to write and compile a book on Lilies which shall tell amateurs, in the plainest and simplest possible way, how most easily and successfully to grow the Lily."—*Westminster Gazette*.

### THE UNHEATED GREENHOUSE

*By MRS. K. L. DAVIDSON. Cheap Edition, 5s. net. By post, 5s. 4d.*

"An infinity of pleasure can be obtained from the due use of an unheated house built under proper conditions, and it is the function of Mrs. Davidson's book to provide hints and directions how to build such a house, and how to cultivate the plants that can be cultivated with advantage without artificial heat."—*Pall Mall Gazette*.

### THE ENGLISH VEGETABLE GARDEN

*By various experts. Cheap Edition, 5s. net. By post, 5s. 6d.*

"The book is of a thoroughly practical nature, and covers the whole ground from the trenching of the land to the gathering of the produce, and, aided by suitable illustrations, the writers have succeeded in furnishing a book which will be of inestimable advantage to the enterprising private or market gardener who would make the most of his resources."—*Field*.

### CHILDREN AND GARDENS

*By GERTRUDE JEKYLL. A garden book for children, treating not only of their own little gardens and other outdoor occupations, but also of the many amusing and interesting things that occur in and about the larger home garden and near grounds. Thoroughly practical and full of pictures. 6s. net. By post, 6s. 4d.*

"Little bits of botany, quaint drawings of all kinds of things, pretty pictures, reminiscences and amusements—why, it is a veritable 'Swiss Family Robinson' for the bairns, and we shall be surprised and disappointed if it is not introduced into many hundreds of homes."—*Liverpool Post*.

### ROCK AND WATER GARDENS: Their Making and Planting

*With Chapters on Wall and Heath Gardens. By F. H. MEYER.*

*Edited by E. T. COOK. 6s. net. By post, 6s. 4d.*

"In this book the author has studied every detail of Nature's ways in order to reproduce in the garden the charms of natural scenery."—*Standard*.

### TREES AND SHRUBS FOR ENGLISH GARDENS

*By E. T. COOK. 12s. 6d. net. By post, 12s. 11d.*

"It contains a mass of instruction and illustration not always to be found altogether when required, and as such it will be very useful as a popular handbook for amateurs and others anxious to grow trees and shrubs."—*Field*.

### MY GARDEN

*By EDEN PHILLPOTTS. 207 pages. 60 full-page illustrations. Cheap Edition, 6s. net. By post, 6s. 5d.*

"It is a thoroughly practical book, addressed especially to those who, like himself, have about an acre of flower garden, and are willing and competent to help a gardener to make it as rich, as harmonious, and as enduring as possible. His chapters on lilies are particularly good."—*World*.

### THE SMALL ROCK GARDEN

*By E. H. JENKINS. Large Crown 8vo, over 50 illustrations and coloured frontispiece. 2s. 6d. net. By post, 2s. 10d.*

"Thoroughly practical and finely illustrated."—*Scootman*.

---

## The "Country Life" Library

---

### A GARDEN IN VENICE

By F. EDEN. *An account of the author's beautiful garden on the Island of the Guidecca at Venice. With 21 collotype and 50 other illustrations. Parchment, limp. 10s. 6d. net. By post, 10s. 10d.*

"Written with a brightness and an infectious enthusiasm that impart interest even to technicalities, it is beautifully and rarely pictured, and its material equipment is such as to delight the lover of beautiful books."—*Glasgow Herald*.

### SEASIDE PLANTING OF TREES AND SHRUBS

By ALFRED GAUT, F.R.H.S. *An interesting and instructive book dealing with a phase of arboriculture hitherto not touched upon. It is profusely illustrated, and diagrams are given explaining certain details. 5s. net. By post, 5s. 4d.*

"Mr. Gaut has accomplished a piece of very solid and extremely useful work, and one that may not be without considerable influence upon the future development of coast-side garden work and agriculture."—*Liverpool Courier*.

### ROSE GROWING MADE EASY

By E. T. COOK. *A simple Rose Guide for amateurs, freely illustrated with diagrams showing ways of increasing, pruning and protecting roses. 1s. net. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net. Postage, 3d. extra.*

"... Ought to be in the hands of every rose grower."—*Aberdeen Free Press*.

### THE BOOK OF BRITISH FERNS

By CHAS. T. DRUERY, F.L.S., V.M.H., *President of the British Pteridological Society. 3s. 6d. net. By post, 3s. 10d.*

"The book is well and lucidly written and arranged; it is altogether beautifully got up. Mr. Druery has long been recognised as an authority on the subject."—*St. James's Gazette*.

### THE HARDY FLOWER BOOK

By E. H. JENKINS. *A complete and trustworthy guide to all who are desirous of adding to their knowledge of the best means of planting and cultivating hardy flowers. Large Crown 8vo, 50 illustrations and coloured frontispiece. 2s. 6d. net. By post, 2s. 10d.*

"The amateur gardener who covets success should read 'The Hardy Flower Book.'"—*Daily Mail*.

### THE DISEASES OF TREES

By PROFESSOR R. HARTIG. *Royal 8vo. 10s. 6d. net. By post, 10s. 10d.*

### GARDENING MADE EASY

By E. T. COOK. *An instructive and practical gardening book of 200 pages and 23 illustrations. 1s. net. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net. Postage, 3d. extra.*

"The A.B.C. of Gardening."—*Scotsman*.

### FRUIT GROWING FOR BEGINNERS

*A simple and concise handbook on the cultivation of Fruit. By F. W. HARVEY. 1s. net. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net. Postage 3d. extra.*

"An amazing amount of information is packed into this book."—*Evening News*.

---

## The "Country Life" Library

---

### VEGETABLE GROWING MADE EASY

*A simple and concise handbook on the cultivation of Vegetables. By OWEN THOMAS, F.R.H.S., V.M.H., and GEORGE WYTHES, F.R.H.S., V.M.H., with a chapter on "The Cooking of Vegetables," by MRS. FRANCES KEYZER. 1s. net. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net. Postage, 3d. extra.*  
"A really valuable book."—*The Lady*.

### POEMS

*By DOROTHY FRANCES GURNEY. 5s. net. By post, 5s. 3d.*

### ANIMAL LIFE BY THE SEA-SHORE

*By G. A. BOULENGER, LL.D., D.Sc., Ph.D., F.R.S., F.Z.S., and C. L. BOULENGER, M.A., D.Sc., F.Z.S.. A simple and concise manual for all who wish to increase their knowledge of the habits and life histories of the wonderful creatures which are to be found on the sea-shore. Nearly 100 illustrations. 5s. net. By post, 5s. 4d.*

"It does not waste words in its descriptions, and makes an admirable *vade-mecum* to the amateur zoologist, who will find in it everything that he is likely to want to know."—*Scotsman*.

### CAUSERIES ON ENGLISH PEWTER

*By ANTONIO DE NAVARRO. Treats of Old Pewter, Pewter Church Plate, Evolution of the Tankard, The Trencher and its Uses, Church Flagons, Chalice, Patens, Forks, Salts, Spoons and the Custody of Pewter. Quarto, price 10s. 6d. net. By inland post, 11s.*

### THE FIRST AND CHIEF GROUNDES OF ARCHITECTURE

*By JOHN SHUTE, 1563, with a historical and critical introduction by LAWRENCE WEAVER. Facsimile edition, limited to one thousand numbered copies of this rare and important work, the first book on architecture published in England. Folio, half-bound in sheepskin, 15s. net. By post, 15s. 6d.*

### ENGLISH LEADWORK: ITS ART AND HISTORY

*By LAWRENCE WEAVER, F.S.A. 440 illustrations. 25s. net. By post, 25s. 9d.*

### ECONOMIES IN DAIRY FARMING

*An important Work on Dairying, by ERNEST MATHEWS (the well known Judge and Expert). 7s. 6d. net. By post, 7s. 10d.*

### PHOTOGRAPHY FOR BEGINNERS

*An instructive and practical book, worded clearly but non-scientifically, for the tyro camera user. 1s. net. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net. Postage, 3d. extra.*

### FRENCH HOUSEHOLD COOKING

*By MRS. FRANCES KEYZER. Shows how simple and inexpensive is the art of cooking as the French understand it. 1s. net. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net. Postage, 3d. extra.*

"Mrs. Keyzer's manual has become one that no housekeeper's library ought to be without."—*Daily Mail*.









